This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world’s books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that’s often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book’s long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ Make non-commercial use of the files We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google’s system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ Maintain attribution The Google “watermark” you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ Keep it legal Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can’t offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book’s appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google’s mission is to organize the world’s information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world’s books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at [http://books.google.com/](http://books.google.com/)
Gift of

Mrs. Frieda Vocke McGill
Long live freedom.

John Vaile.

Shore Bay.

Dec. 1, 1854.
MILTON

AREOPAGITICA

JOHN W. HALES
London

HENRY FROWDE

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE

7 PATERNOSTER ROW
Milton

Areopagitica

Edited

with introduction and notes

by

John W. Hales, M.A.,

Professor of English Language and Literature at King's College, London;
Formerly Fellow and Assistant Tutor of Christ's College, Cambridge;
Barrister-at-Law of Lincoln's Inn; Editor of 'Longer English Poems';
Co-Editor of the 'London Series of English Classics,' &c.

Third Edition, Revised

Oxford

At the Clarendon Press

M DCCC LXXXII

[All rights reserved]
INTRODUCTION.

SECTION I. THE YEAR (1644).

Of the circumstances under which the Areopagitica was written, Milton has himself given an account in his Second Defence of the People of England (Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano contra infamem libellum anonymum cui titulus Regii Sanguinis Clamor ad Cælum adversus Parricidas Anglicanos). In that work, to refute fully the calumnies heaped on his name by his enemy, he gives a rapid sketch of his past life. After speaking of his earlier days, he mentions his travels abroad, and then how, coming home, he was drawn into the great struggle that he found prevailing, or beginning to prevail.

‘Then pursuing my former route through France I returned to my native country, after an absence of one year and about three months, at the time when Charles, having broken the peace, was renewing what is called the episcopal war with the Scots, in which the Royalists being routed in the first encounter, and the English being universally and justly disaffected, the necessity of his affairs at last obliged him to convene a parliament. As soon as I was able I hired a spacious house in the city, for myself and my books; where I again, with rapture, resumed my literary pursuits, and where I calmly awaited the issue of the contest, which I trusted to the wise conduct of Providence, and to the courage of the people. The vigour of the Parliament had begun to humble the pride of the bishops. As long as the liberty of speech was no longer subject to control, all mouths began to be opened against the bishops. They said that it was unjust that they alone should differ from the model of other Reformed Churches; that the government of the Church should be according to the pattern of other churches, and particularly the word of God. This awakened all my attention and my zeal. I saw that a way was opening for the establishment of real liberty; that the foundation was laying for the deliverance of man from the yoke of slavery and superstition; that the principles of religion, which were the first
objects of our care, would exert a salutary influence on the
manners and constitution of the republic. And as I had from
my youth studied the distinctions between religious and civil
rights, I perceived that, if ever I wished to be of use, I ought at
least not to be wanting to my country, to the Church, and to so
many of my fellow-Christians, in a crisis of so much danger. I
therefore determined to relinquish the other pursuits in which
I was engaged, and to transfer the whole force of my talents and
my industry to this one important object. I accordingly wrote
two books to a friend concerning the Reformation of the Church
of England. Afterwards when two bishops of superior dis-
tinction vindicated their privileges against some principal
ministers, I thought that on those topics, to the consideration
of which I was led solely by my love of truth and my reverence
for Christianity, I should not probably write worse than those
who were contending only for their own emoluments and usur-
prations. I therefore answered the one in two books, of which
the first is inscribed 'Concerning Prelatical Episcopacy,' and
the other 'Concerning the Mode of Ecclesiastical Government';
and I replied to the other in some animadversions, and soon
after in an apology. On this occasion it was supposed that I
brought a timely succour to the ministers, who were hardly a
match for the eloquence of their opponents, and from that time
I was actively employed in refuting any answers that appeared.
When the bishops could no longer resist the multitude of their
assailants, I had leisure to turn my thoughts to other subjects;
to the promotion of real and substantial liberty, which is rather
to be sought from within than from without; and whose
existence depends, not so much on the terror of the sword
as on sobriety of conduct and integrity of life. When, therefore,
I perceived that there were three species of liberty which are
essential to the happiness of social life—religious, domestic, and
civil; and as I had already written concerning the first, and the
magistrates were strenuously active in obtaining the third, I
determined to turn my attention to the second, or the domestic
species. As they seemed to involve three material questions—
the conditions of the conjugal tie, the education of children, and
the free publications of the thoughts—I made them objects of
distinct consideration. I explained my sentiments, not only
concerning the solemnization of matrimony, but the dissolution,
if circumstances rendered it necessary, and I drew my argu-
ments from the divine law, which Christ did not abolish, or
publish another more grievous than that of Moses. I stated
my own opinions, and those of others, concerning the exclusive
exception of fornication, which our illustrious Selden has since,
in his "Hebrew Wife," more copiously discussed; for he, in vain, makes a vaunt of liberty in the senate, or in the forum, who languishes under the vilest servitude to an inferior at home. On this subject, therefore, I published some books, which were more particularly necessary at that time, when man and wife were often the most inveterate foes; when the man often staid to take care of his children at home, while the mother of the family was seen in the camp of the enemy, threatening death and destruction to her husband. I then discussed the principles of education in a summary manner, but sufficiently copious for those who attend seriously to the subject, than which nothing can be more necessary to principle the minds of men in virtue, the only genuine source of political and individual liberty, the only true safeguard of states, the bulwark of their prosperity and renown. Lastly, I wrote my "Areopagitica," after the true Attic style, in order to deliver the press from the restraints with which it was encumbered; that the power of determining what was true and what was false, what ought to be published and what to be suppressed, might no longer be entrusted to a few illiterate and illiberal individuals, who refused their sanction to any work which contained views or sentiments at all above the level of the vulgar superstition. On the last species of civil liberty I said nothing, because I saw that sufficient attention was paid to it by the magistrates; nor did I write anything on the prerogative of the Crown till the King, voted an enemy by the parliament, and vanquished in the field, was summoned before the tribunal which condemned him to lose his head.

Such is the account Milton himself gives of his writings just before the outbreak of the Civil War and during the continuance of it. The order of them is not indeed minutely accurate; for the 'some books' on the subject of divorce were not all published before he proceeded to the questions of Education and Unlicensed Printing; but it probably represents precisely enough the succession in which the various subjects discussed engaged his attention. The year of his life that especially concerns us here is 1644. It was in the November of that year that the Areopagitica was published. Besides this masterpiece, there appeared also these other works:—In February, a second edition of his first Divorce treatise (The Doctrine and

1 See Milton's Prose Works, the one-volume edition, pp. 934, 935. For the original Latin, see ibid. pp. 719, 720.
INTRODUCTION.

Discipline of Divorce restored to the good of both sexes from the bondage of Canon Law and other Mistakes to the true meaning of Scripture in the Law and Gospel compared, wherein also are set down the bad consequences of abolishing or condemning as sin that which the law of God allows and Christ abolished not); in June, his tractate Of Education to Master Samuel Hartlib; in July, his Second Divorce Book (The Judgment of Martin Bucer concerning Divorce, written to Edward the Sixth in his second book of the Kingdom of Christ, and now Englished; wherein a late book restoring the Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce is here confirmed and justified by the authority of Martin Bucer). So that the year 1644 was one of memorable activity in Milton’s life.

This activity, it will have been noticed, was all in the direction of certain social and other reforms. It was all, as Milton himself puts it, in behalf of ‘liberty’—of the ‘domestic species’ of ‘liberty,’ ‘Liberty’s defence’ was always his ‘noble task’; and there was never a time in his career when he strove with more fervent hope, or more brilliant skill, to secure for his age the freedom without which, as it seemed to him, life was cramped and starved, and the world a mere prison. In the interest of this great cause he had abandoned for a while those high studies to which his previous years had been devoted. Of his poetical writings only a few sonnets belong to this period of his life. ‘God, by His secretary Conscience,’ enjoined a far different ‘service,’ and ‘it were sad for me if I should draw back.’

This particular year formed a crisis in Milton’s life. It witnessed the culmination of his hopefulness. There is especially noticeable in the Areopagitica a certain sanguineness and anticipation, which subsequent events were bitterly to reprove. In fact Milton was yet but faintly conscious of the immense discrepancies between his age and himself. To him, when the Long Parliament met in the autumn of 1640, it had seemed that a new day was dawning for England and for mankind.

‘The world’s great age begins anew,
The golden years return.’

And he had hailed with a profound exultation the opening acts
INTRODUCTION.

of that great assembly. When the Star Chamber and its kindred iniquities were suppressed, it seemed once more possible to breathe, and hopes sprang up in him of a new and perfecter reformation. This confidence appeared justified by the fall of the bishops, who had identified themselves with what was held to be the cause of tyranny. Surely there was now at hand a splendid regeneration. As one thinks of Milton in those hours of elation, there rises before the mind the image of another poet, whose experience was strangely similar. Wordsworth, on the tiptoe of expectation at the beginning of the French Revolution, reminds one sadly of Milton just a century and a half before.

'Oh! pleasant exercise of hope and joy,
For mighty were the auxiliars which then stood
Upon our side, we who were strong in love!
Bliss was it in that dawn to be alive,
But to be young was very heaven! Oh! times
In which the meagre, stale, forbidden ways
Of custom, law, and statute took at once
The attraction of a country in romance!
When Reason seemed the most to assert her rights,
When most intent on making of herself
A prime Enchantress—to assist the work
Which then was going forward in her name.'

The Areopagitica reflects Milton still sanguine and confident. It is true that, as we shall see, the work in fact originated from what might well have taught the writer that his dreams of a complete emancipation were not to be realised; but Milton could not recognise this conclusion, so 'lame and impotent.' He could not yet bring himself to believe that the dawn, whose rising he had greeted with such joy, was presently to be overcast—that the sun was not to rise higher, but to be stayed in its bright course, as by some malignant Joshua, and presently blurred and obscured with mist and fog. As we see him in this Speech to the Parliament of England he is filled with pride and with hope. No nobler panegyric has been pronounced on our country than that he here pronounces with his richest eloquence:—

'Lords and Commons of England, consider what Nation it is wherof ye are the governours: a Nation not slow and dull, but
of a quick, ingenious, and piercing spirit, acute to invent, subtle
and sinewy to discourse, not beneath the reach of any point the
highest that human capacity can soar to. Therefore the studies
of learning, in her deepest sciences, have bin so ancient and
so eminent among us that writers of good antiquity and ablest
judgement have bin persuaded that ev'n the school of Py-
thagoras, and the Persian wisdom, took beginning from the old
Philosophy of this Iland. And that wise and civill Roman Julius
Agricola, who govern'd once here for Cæsar, preferr'd the
naturall wits of Britain before the labour'd studies of the French.
Nor is for nothing that the grave and frugal Transilvanian sends
out yearly from as farre as the mountaneous borders of Russia,
and beyond the Hercynian wildernes, not their youth, but their
stay'd men, to learn our language and our theologic arts. Yet
that which is above all this, the favour and the love of heav'n,
we have great argument to think in a peculiar manner propitious
and propending towards us. Why else was this Nation chos'n
before any other that out of her, as out of Sion, should be
proclaim'd and sounded forth the first tidings and trumpet of
Reformation to all Europ? . . . . Behold now this vast city;
a city of refuge, the mansion house of liberty, encompast and
surrounded with his protection; the shop of warre hath not there
more anvils and hammers making, to fashion out the plates and
instruments of armed Justice, in defence of beleaguer'd Truth,
than there be pens and heads there, sitting by their studious
camps, musing, searching, revolving new notions and idea's
wherewith to present, as with their homage and their fealty, the
approaching Reformation; others as fast reading, trying all
things, assenting to the force of reason and convincement.
What could a man require more from a Nation so pliant and
so prone to seek after knowledge? What wants there to such
a towardy and pregnant soile, but wise and faithfull labourers,
to make a knowing people—a Nation of Prophets, of Sages, and
of Worthies?'

It must be remembered that in this year, 1644, the Parlia-
mentary cause had achieved triumphs that left little room for
doubt as to what would be the issue of the war. The Scots had
entered England in January. In the summer the Earl of Essex
had advanced westward into Cornwall. July had brought the
utter defeat of Prince Rupert at Marston Moor. A gleam of
light was, it is true, thrown on the Royal banner by the rising of
Montrose, in the autumn; and in England the King's side had
not been without its successes, of which the most important was
INTRODUCTION.

the dispersion of Essex's army in September; but, on the whole, the Parliament had gained strength and confidence, and the fortune of their opponents was becoming highly dubious, if not quite desperate. In the very November in which the Areopagitica was published the 'New Model' of the army was proposed, for there were arising into note men resolved to prosecute the war with a dispatch and an energy not yet conceived. Clearly Milton was troubled by no misgivings as to the event of this military conflict. His mind had passed away from it into other fields, and he thought himself at leisure to open a spiritual campaign.

In strange contrast with the buoyancy and pride of the Areopagitica is the tone of certain later writings. The high expectations he had cherished were to be disappointed. It was to be his sad lot to discover that the overthrowers of tyranny might themselves prove tyrants.

'New foes arise
Threatening to bind our souls with secular chains.'

The Presbyterians were presently to display an intolerance not exceeded by the Episcopalians whom they had displaced:

'New presbyter is but old priest writ large.'

And it was to prove impossible to reconstruct a new political order which should be not dependent on the strength and wisdom of a great dictator, and so tottering to its fall the instant he was removed, but, in itself, strong, and stable, and enduring. The age was to be found unequal to the maintenance, or rather the attainment, of the ideal entertained by Milton's lofty spirit. 'Bondage with ease' was to be dearer than 'strenuous liberty.' One may easily believe that Milton expected too much; that he misinterpreted the signs of the times; that he too readily supposed others to be actuated by the same high-mindedness and pure enthusiasm that moved himself; but the discovery of his misapprehensions must have been none the less affecting; and with a lesser nature would have ended in mere disgust and contempt for his race. As it was, though some bitter words escaped him, he did not argue

'Against Heaven's hand or will, nor bate a jot
Of heart or hope; but still' bore up and steered
'Right onward.'
INTRODUCTION.

He was not left comfortless.

‘Thou hast great allies;
Thy friends are exultations, agonies,
And love, and man’s unconquerable mind.’

And the difference just mentioned between his earlier and his later political writings appears not in any growing predominance of scorn and of satire, but in a certain enforced sobriety of expectation. He is prepared for the worst rather than sanguine of the best. If we remember what his dreams had been, and what were the realities he saw, there is a profound pathos in these following words of his, uttered just before the Restoration. When he wrote them, he, like his Samson, was not ‘in the list of them that hope’; but, when he wrote the Areopagitica, he felt himself called to be a ‘great deliverer,’ Heaven’s ‘nursling and choice delight,’ led on

‘To mightiest deeds
Above the nerve of mortal arm,
Against the Uncircumcised, our enemies.’

The passage now to be quoted forms the conclusion of ‘The Ready and Easy Way to Establish a Free Commonwealth, and the excellence thereof, compared with the inconveniences and dangers of readmitting Kingship in this Nation,’ published in 1660:—

‘I have no more to say at present; few words will save us, well considered; few and easy things now seasonably done. But if the people be so affected as to prostitute religion and liberty to the vain and groundless apprehension that nothing but kingship can restore trade, not remembering the frequent plagues and pestilences that then wasted this city, such as, through God’s mercy, we never have felt since; and that trade flourishes nowhere more than in the free commonwealths of Italy, Germany, and the Low Countries, before their eyes at this day; yet if trade be grown so craving and importunate, through the profuse living of tradesmen, that nothing can support it but the luxurious expenses of a nation upon trifles or superfluities; so as if the people generally should betake themselves to frugality it might prove a dangerous matter, lest tradesmen should mutiny for want of trading; and that, therefore, we must forego and set to sale religion, liberty, honour, safety, all concernsments divine or human, to keep up trading; if, lastly, after all this light among us the
same reason shall pass for current to put our necks again under kingship, as was made use of by the Jews to return back to Egypt, and to the worship of their idol queen, because they falsely imagined that they then lived in more plenty and prosperity; our condition is not sound but rotten, both in religion and all civil prudence; and will bring us soon the way we are marching to those calamities which attend always and unavoidably on luxury, all national judgments under foreign and domestic slavery, so far we shall be from mending our condition by monarchical our government whatever new conceit now possesses us. However, with all hazard, I have ventured what I thought my duty to speak in season, and to forewarn my country in time; wherein I doubt not but there be many wise in all places and degrees, but am sorry the effects of wisdom are so little seen among us. Many circumstances and particulars I could have added in those things whereof I have spoken, but a few main matters now put speedily in execution will suffice to recover us and set all right; and there will want at no time who are good at circumstances, but men who set their minds on main matters, and sufficiently urge them in these most difficult times, I find not many. What I have spoken is the language of that which is not called amiss "The Good old Cause"; if it seem strange to any, it will not seem more strange, I hope, than convincing to backsliders. Thus much I should perhaps have said, though I were sure I should have spoken only to trees and stones; and had none to cry to but with the prophet "O earth, earth, earth!" to tell the very soil itself what her perverse inhabitants are deaf to. Nay, though what I have spoke should happen (which thou suffer not, who did'st create mankind free! Nor thou next, who did'st redeem us from being servants of men,) to be the last words of our expiring liberty. But I trust I shall have spoken persuasion to abundance of sensible and ingenuous men; to some, perhaps, whom God may raise from these stones to become children of reviving liberty; and may reclaim though they seem now choosing them a captain back for Egypt, to bethink themselves a little, and consider whither they are rushing; to exhort this torrent also of the people not to be so impetuous, but to keep their due channel, and at length recovering and uniting their better resolutions, now that they see already how open and unbounded the insolence and rage is of our common enemies, to stay these ruinous proceedings, justly and timely fearing to what a precipice of destruction the deluge of this epidemic madness would hurry us, through the general defection of a misguided and abused multitude.' (Works, pp. 451–2.)
SECTION II. THE SUBJECT.

And yet Milton’s own experience might well have made him mistrustful of his conceptions of the future. The attempt made to reimpose restrictions upon the freedom of expressed thought, against which he raises his voice in the Areopagitica with so noble a vehemence, so that it will still be heard to the very end of time, was only too significant of the temper and tendencies of the Presbyterian rule that then lay upon his country. From the meeting of the Long Parliament in November, 1640, to June, 1643, the Press had been practically free. Even the custom of registering publications in the books of the Stationers’ Company had been widely neglected. On June 14, 1643, the following Ordinance was ordered by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament:

‘An Order of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, for the Regulating of Printing, and for suppressing the great late abuses and frequent disorders in Printing many false, Scandalous, Seditious, Libellous, and unlicensed Pamphlets, to the great defamation of Religion and Government.

‘Also, authorizing the Masters & Wardens of the Company of Stationers to make diligent search, seize and carry away all such Books as they shall finde Printed, or reprinted by any man having no lawfull interest in them, being entred into the Hall Book to any other man as his proper Copies.

‘Die Mercurii, 14 June, 1643.—Ordered by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament that this Order shall be forthwith printed and published.—J. Brown Cler. Parliametorum: Hen. Elsing Cler. De Com².

‘Die Mercurii, 14 Junii, 1643.

‘Whereas divers good Orders have bin lately made by both Houses of Parliament, for suppressing the great late abuses and frequent disorders in Printing many false, forged, scandalous, seditious, libellous, and unlicensed Papers, Pamphlets, and Books to the great defamation of Religion and government. Which orders (notwithstanding the diligence of the Company of Stationers, to put them in full execution) having taken little

¹ See Masson’s Life of John Milton and History of his Time, iii. 265 et seq.
² ‘LONDON, Printed for I. Wright in the Old-baily, June 16, 1643.’ See Arber’s Areopagitica, pp. 25–8.
INTRODUCTION.

or no effect: By reason the bill in preparation, for redresse of the said disorders, hath hitherto bin retarded through the present distractions, and very many, as well Stationers and Printers, as others of sundry other professions not free of the Stationers Company, have taken upon them to set up sundry private Printing Presses in corners, and to print, vend, publish and disperse Books, pamphlets and papers, in such multitudes, that no industry could be sufficient to discover or bring to punishment, all the several abounding delinquents: And by reason that divers of the Stationers Company and others being Delinquents (contrary to former orders and the constant custome used among the said Company) have taken liberty to Print, Vend and publish, the most profitable vendible Copies of Books, belonging to the Company and other Stationers, especially of such Agents as are employed in putting the said Orders in Execution, and that by way of revenge for giving information against them to the Houses for their Delinquences in Printing, to the great prejudice of the said Company of Stationers and Agents, and to their discouragement in this publik service.

'It is therefore Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That no Order or Declaration of both, or either House of Parliament shall be printed by any, but by order of one or both the said Houses: Nor other Book, Pamphlet, paper, nor part of any such Book, Pamphlet, or paper, shall from henceforth be printed, bound, stitched or put to sale by any person or persons whatsoever, unlese the same be first approved of and licensed under the hands of such person or persons as both, or either of the said Houses shall appoint for the licensing of the same, and entred in the Register Book of the Company of Stationers, according to Ancient custom, and the Printer thereof to put his name thereto. And that no person or persons shall hereafter print, or cause to be reprinted any Book, or Books or part of Book, or Books heretofore allowed of and granted to the said Company of Stationers for their relief and maintenance of their poore, without the licence or consent of the Master, Wardens, and Assistants of the said Company; Nor any Book or Books lawfully licenced and entred in the Register of the said Company for any particular member thereof, without the licence and consent of the owner or owners thereof. Nor yet import any such Book or Books, or part of Book or Books formerly Printed here, from beyond the Seas, upon paine of forfeiting the same to the Owner, or Owners of the Copies of the said Books, and such further punishment as shall be thought fit.
INTRODUCTION.

'And the Master and Wardens of the said Company, the Gentleman Usher of the House of Peers, the Sergeant of the Commons House and their deputies, together with the persons formerly appointed by the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations, are hereby Authorized and required, from time to time, to make diligent search in all places, where they shall think meete, for all unlicensed Printing Presses, and all Presses any way employed in the printing of scandalous or unlicensed Papers, Pamphlets, Books, or any Copies of Books belonging to the said Company, or any member thereof, without their approbation and consents, and to seize and carry away such Printing Presses, Letters, together with the Nut, Spindle, and other materials of every such irregular Printer, which they find so misemployed, unto the Common Hall of the said Company, there to be defaced and made unserviceable according to Ancient Custom; And likewise to make diligent search in all suspected Printing-houses, Ware-houses, Shops and other places for such scandalous and unlicensed Books, papers, Pamphlets, and all other Books, not entred, nor signed with the Printers name as aforesaid, being printed, or reprinted by such as have no lawfull interest in them, or any way contrary to this Order, and the same to seize and carry away to the said common hall, there to remain till both or either House of Parliament shall dispose thereof, And likewise to apprehend all Authors, Printers, and other persons whatsoever employed in compiling, printing, stitching, binding, publishing and dispersing of the said scandalous, unlicensed, and unwarrantable papers, books and pamphlets as aforesaid, and all those who shall resist the said Parties in searching after them, and to bring them afore either of the Houses or the Committee of Examinations, that so they may receive such further punishments, as their Offences shall demerit, and not to be released untill they have given satisfaction to the Parties employed in their apprehension for their paines and charges, and given sufficient caution not to offend in like sort for the future. And all Justices of the Peace, Captaines, Constables and other officers, are hereby ordered and required to be aiding, and assisting to the foresaid persons in the due execution of all, and singular the premisses and in the apprehension of all Offenders against the same. And in case of opposition to break open Doores and Locks.

'And it is further ordered, that this Order be forthwith Printed and Published, to the end that notice may be taken thereof, and all Contemners of it left inexculcable.

'FINIS.'
INTRODUCTION.

For some account of the previous history of Book-censorship the reader may be referred to the *Areopagitica* itself, where, in the opening part of his argument, Milton rapidly surveys the conduct of other countries and times in this respect. It is clear that books enjoyed an immunity from restriction in the Middle Ages, only because they were held to be of comparatively slight account. As soon as ever their influence began to extend, and the printing press to multiply copies without limit, so soon were they regarded with jealous eyes and threatened with a rigorous supervision. From the close of the fifteenth century a formal censorship became a more and more common institution.

The oldest mandate, for appointing a book-censor, says Beckmann, 'is, as far as I know at present, that issued by Berthold, Archbishop of Mentz, in the year 1486, and which may be found in the fourth volume of Guden's Codex Diplomaticus. In the year 1501, Pope Alexander VI. published a bull, the first part of which may form an excellent companion to the mandate of the Archbishop of Mentz. After some complaints against the devil, who sows tares among the wheat, his holiness proceeds thus:—

'Having been informed that, by means of the said art, many books and treatises containing various errors and pernicious doctrines, even hostile to the holy Christian religion, have been printed, and are still printed in various parts of the world, particularly in the provinces of Cologne, Mentz, Trier, and Magdeburg: and being desirous, without further delay, to put a stop to this detestable evil, . . . we, by these presents, and by authority of the Apostolic Chamber, strictly forbid all printers, their servants, and those exercising the art of printing under them, in any manner whatsoever, in the above-said provinces, under pain of excommunication, and a pecuniary fine, to be imposed and executed by our venerable brethren the Archbishops of Cologne, Mentz, Trier, and Magdeburg, and their vicars-general or official in spirituals, according to the pleasure of each in his own province, to print hereafter any books, treatises, or writings, until they have consulted on this subject the archbishops, vicars, or officials above-mentioned, and obtained their special and express

1 See also Standard Library Cyclop. s. v. Press Censorship; Beckmann's Hist. of Inventions, on Book Censors, and on Exclusive Privilege for Printing Books (ii. 512–522, of the 4th Engl. edit.); Knight's London, vol. 5, The Old London Booksellers; Hart's Index Expurgatorius Anglicanus, Parts i and ii; Hallam's Constitut. Hist. of Engl. passim; D'Israeli's Curiosities of Literature, on Licensers of the Press; Hunt's Fourth Estate, 1850; Buckle's Hist. of Civilization in England, &c.
licence, to be granted free of all expense, whose consciences we charge, that before they grant any licence of this kind, they will carefully examine, or cause to be examined, by able and catholic persons, the works to be printed; and that they will take the utmost care that nothing may be printed wicked or scandalous, or contrary to the orthodox faith. The rest of the bull contains regulations to prevent works already printed from doing mischief. All catalogues and books printed before that period were to be examined, and those which contained anything prejudicial to the Catholic religion were to be burned. In the beginning of the sixteenth century it was ordered by the well-known Council of the Lateran, held at Rome in the year 1515, that, in future, no books should be printed but such as had been inspected by ecclesiastical censors. In France, the faculty of Theology usurped, as some say, the right of censuring books; but in the year 1650, when public censors, whom the faculty opposed, were appointed, without their consent, they stated the antiquity of their right to be two hundred years. For they said, “It is above two hundred years since the doctors of Paris have had a right to approve books without being subjected but to their own faculty, to which they assert they are alone responsible for their decisions.”

In countries where the Inquisition was established the work of the censorship was undertaken by the Holy Office. Elsewhere it was taken up by the bishops. In England it was especially discharged by the Star Chamber, a Court that was in fact, whatever the theoretic constitution, mainly in the hands of the bishops. Long before Archbishop Laud's time this Court had exercised authority over the Press (as, for example, at Whitgift's instance in 1585); but it was under him that its restrictive power was put forth in its severest form. On the 11th day of July, 1637, was passed the notorious 'Decree of Starre-Chamber Concerning Printing.' This document may be found entire in Mr. Arber's Reprint of the Areopagitica. We quote here only the more relevant of its thirty-three clauses.

1 In Camera Stellata coram Concilio ibidem, vndecimo die Iulii, Anno decimo tertio CAROLI Regis.

1 Imprimis, That no person or persons whatsoever shall presume to print, or cause to bee printed, either in the parts beyond the Seas, or in this Realme, or other his Maisties Dominions,

1 See Gardiner's Personal Government of Charles I, i. 161.
any seditious, scismaticall, or offensive Bookes or Pamphlets, to
the scandall of Religion, or the Church, or the Government, or
Governours of the Church or State, or Commonwealth, or of any
Corporation, or particular person or persons whatsoever, nor
shall import any such Booke or Bookes, nor sell or dispose of
them, or any of them, nor cause any such to be bound, stitched,
or sowed, vpon paine that he or they so offending, shall loose all
such Bookes and Pamphlets, and also haue, and suffer such cor-
rection, and severe punishment, either by Fine, imprisonment, or
other corporall punishment, or otherwise, as by this Court, or by
His Maiesties Commissioners for causes Ecclesiasticall in the high
Commission Court, respectively, as the several causes shall re-
quire, shall be thought fit to be inflicted upon him, or them, for
such their offence and contempt.

'II. Item, That no person or persons whatsoever, shall at any
time print, or cause to be imprinted, any Booke or Pamphlet
whatsoever vntlesse the same Booke or Pamphlet, and also all and
every the Titles, Epistles, Prefaces, Proems, Preambles, Intro-
ductions, Tables, Dedications, and other matters and things
whatsoever thereunto annexed, or therewith imprinted, shall be
first lawfully licencd and authorized onely by such person and
persons as are hereafter expressed, and by no other, and shall be
also first entred into the Registers Booke of the Company of
Stationers; vpon paine that every Printer offending therein, shall
be for euer hereafter disabled to use or exercise the Art or
Mysterie of Printing, and receiue such further punishment, as by
this Court or the high Commission Court respectively, as the
severall causes shall require, shall be thought fitting.

'III. Item, That all Bookes concerning the common Lawes of
this Realme shall be printed by the especiall allowance of the
Lords chiefe Justices, and the Lord chiefe Baron for the time
being, or one or more of them, or by their appointment: And
that all Books of History, belonging to this State, and present
times, or any other Booke of State affaires, shall be licenced
by the principall Secretaries of State, or one of them, or by their
appointment; And that all Bookes concerning Heraldry, Titles of
Honour and Armes, or otherwise concerning the Office of Earle
Marshall, shall be licenced by the Earle Marshall, or by his ap-
pointment; And further, that all other Books, whether of Diuinitie,
Phisicke, Philosophie, Poetry, or whatsoever, shall be allowed by
the Lord Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, or Bishop of London for the
time being, or by their appointment, or the Chancellours, or Vice
Chancellors of either of the Vniuersities of this Realme for the
time being.

- 'Alwayes prouided, that the Chancellour or Vice-Chancellour,
of either of the Vniuersities, shall Licence onely such Booke or Bookes that are to be Printed within the limits of the Vniuersities respectively, but not in London, or elsewhere, nor meddling either with Bookes of the common Law, or matters of State.

IV. Item, That euery person and persons, which by any Decree of this Court are, or shall be appointed or authorized to Licence Bookes, or giue Warrant for imprinting thereof, as is aforesaid, shall haue two seuerall written Copies of the same Booke or Bookes with the Titles, Epistles, Prefaces, Proems, Preambles, Introductions, Tables, Dedications, and other things whatsoeuer thereunto annexed. One of which said Copies shall be kept in the publike Registries of the said Lord Arch-Bishop, and Bishop of London respectively, or in the Office of the Chancellour, or Vice-Chancellour of either of the Vniuersities, or with the Earle Marshall or principall Secretaries of State, or with the Lords chiefe Justices, or chiefe Baron, of all such Bookes as shall be licenced by them severely, to the end that he or they may be secure, that the Copy so licensed by him or them shall not bee altered without his or their pruiitie, and the other shall remain with him whose Copy it is, and vpon both the said Copies, he or they that shall allow the said Booke, shall testifie vnder his or their hand or hands, that there is nothing in that Booke or Books contained, that is contrary to Christian Faith, and the Doctrine and Discipline of the Church of England, nor against the State or Gouernment, nor contrary to good life, or good manners, or otherwise, as the nature and subject of the work shall require, which licence or approbation shall be imprinted in the beginning of the same Booke, with the name, or names of him or them that shall authorize or license the same, for a testimonie of the allowance thereof.

VII. Item, That no person or persons shall within this Kingdom, or elsewhere imprint, or cause to be imprinted, nor shall import or bring in, or cause to be imported or brought into this Kingdom, from, or out of any other His Maisties Dominions, nor from other, or any parts beyond the Seas, any Copy, book or books, or part of any booke or bookes, printed beyond the seas, or elsewhere, which the said Company of Stationers, or any other person or persons haue, or shall by any Letters Patents, Order, or Entrance in their Register book, or otherwise, haue the right, priuileged, authoritie, or allowance soly to print, nor shall bind, stitch, or put to sale, any such booke or bookes, upon paine of losse and forfeiture of all the said bookes, and of such Fine, or other punishment, for every booke or part of a booke so imprinted or imported, bound, stitched, or put to sale, to be leuyed of the party so offending, as by the power of this Court, or the
high Commission Court respectively, as the severall causes shall require, shall be thought fit.

VIII. Item, Every person and persons that shall hereafter Print, or cause to be Printed, any Booke, Ballads, Charts, Portraits, or any other thing or things whatsoever, shall thereunto or thereon Print and set his and their owne name or names, as also the name or names of the Author or Authors, Maker or Makers of the same, and by, or from whom any such booke, or other thing is, or shall be printed, upon pain of forfutre of all such Books, Ballads, Chartes, Portraits, and other thing or things, printed contrary to this Article; And the presses, Letters and other instruments for Printing, wherewith such Books, ballads, Chartes, Portraits, and other thing or things shall be printed, to be defaced and made vnseruiceable, and the party and parties so offending, to be fined, imprisoned, and have such other corporall punishment, or otherwise, as by this Honourable Court, or the said high Commission respectively, as the severall causes shall require, shall be thought fit.

XII. Item, That no stranger or forreigner whatsoever, be suffered to bring in, or vent here, any booke or bookes printed beyond the seas, in any language whatsoever, either by themselves or their secret Factors, except such onely as bee free Stationers of London, and such as haue beeene brought vp in that profession, and haue their whole meanes of subsistance, and livelihood depending thereupon, upon paine of confiscation of all such Books so imported, and such further penalties, as by this Court, or the high Commission Court respectively, as the severall causes shall require, shall be thought fit to be imposed.

XIII. Item, That no person or persons within the Citie of London, or the liberties thereof, or elsewhere, shall erect or cause to be erected any Presse or Printing-house, nor shall demise, or let, or suffer to be held or vSED, any house, vault, seller, or other roome whatsoever, to, or by any person or persons, for a Printing-house, or place to print in, vnlesse he or they which shall so demise or let the same, or suffer the same to be so vsed, shall first give notice to the said Master and Wardens of the Company of Stationers for the time being, of such demise, or suffering to worke or print there, upon paine of imprisonment, and such other punishment as by this Court, or the said high Commission Court respectively, as the severall Causes shall require, shall bee thought fit.

XV. Item, The Court doth declare, that as formerly, so now, there shall be but Twentie Master Printers allowed to haue the use of one Presse or more, as is after specified, and doth hereby nominate, allow, and admit these persons whose names hereafter
follow, to the number of Twentie, to have the use of a Press, or Presses and Printing-house, for the time being, *vis.* Felix Kingston, Adam Islip, Thomas Purfoot, Miles Flesher, Thomas Harper, John Beale, John Legat, Robert Young, John Haviland, George Miller, Richard Badger, Thomas Coles, Bernard Alsop, Richard Bishop, Edward Griffin, Thomas Purslow, Richard Hodgkinson, John Dawson, John Raworth, Marmaduke Parsons. And further, the Court doth order and decree, That it shall be lawfull for the Lord Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, or the Lord Bishop of London, for the time being, taking to him or them six other high Commissioners, to supply the place or places of those which are now already Printers by this Court, as they shall fall void by death, or Censure, or otherwise; Prouided that they exceed not the number of Twentie, besides his Majesties Printers, and the Printers allowed for the Universities.

*XXII. Item,* The Court doth hereby declare, that it doth not hereby restraine the Printers of either of the Universities from taking what number of Apprentices for their service in printing there, they themselves shall think fit. Prouided alwayes, that the said Printers in the Universities shall imploy all their owne Journey-men within themselves, and not suffer any of their said Journey-men to go abroad for employment to the Printers of London (vnesse vpon occasion some Printers of London desire to imploy some extraordinary Workman or Workmen amongst them, without prejudice to their owne Journey-men, who are Freemen) vpon such penalty as the Chancellor of either of the Universities for the time being, shall think fit to inflict vpon the delinquents herein.

*XXV. Item,* That for the better discovery of printing in Corners without licence; The Master and Wardens of the Company of Stationers for the time being, or any two licensed Master-Printers, which shall be appointed by the Lord Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, or Lord B. of London for the time being, shall haue power and authority, to take vnto themselves such assistance as they shall think needfull, and to search what houses and shops (and at what time they shall think fit) especially Printing-houses, and to view what is in printing, and to call for the licence to see whether it be licenced or no, and if not, to seize vpon so much as is printed, together with the seuerall offenders, and to bring them before the Lord Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, or the Lord Bishop of London for the time being, that they or either of them may take such further order therein as shall appertaine to Iustice.

*XXVI. Item,* The Court doth declare, that it shall be lawfull also for the said Searchers, if, vpon search they find any book or booke, or part of booke or books which they suspect to containe matter in it or them, contrary to the doctrine and discipline of
INTRODUCTION.

the Church of England, or against the State and Government, upon such suspicion to seize upon such book or books, or part of booke or books, and to bring it, or them, to the Lord Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, or the Lord Bishop of London for the time being, who shall take such further course therein, as to their Lordships, or either of them shall seeme fit.

'XXVII. Item, The Court doth order and declare, that there shall be foure Founders of letters for printing allowed, and no more, and doth hereby nominate, allow, and admit these persons, whose names hereafter follow, to the number of foure, to be letter-Founders for the time being, (viz.) John Grismand, Thomas Wright, Arthur Nichols, Alexander Fifeild. And further, the Court doth Order and Decree, that it shall be lawfull for the Lord Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, or the Lord Bishop of London for the time being, taking unto him or them, six other high Commissioners, to supply the place or places of these who are now allowed Founders of letters by this Court, as they shall fall void by death, censure, or otherwise.

Provided, that they exceede not the number of foure, set downe by this Court. And if any person or persons, not being an allowed Founder, shall notwithstanding take vpon him, or them, to Found, or cast letters for printing, vpon complaint and proofe made of such offence, or offences, he, or they so offending, shal suffer such punishment, as this Court, or the High Commission court respectiuely, as the seuerall causes shall require, shall think fit to inflict vpon them.

'XXXIII. Item, That whereas there is an agreement betwixt Sir Thomas Bodley, Knight, Founder of the Vniuersitie Library at Oxford, and the Master, Wardens, and Assistants of the Company of Stationers (viz.) That one Booke of euery sort that is new printed, or reprinted with additions, be sent to the Vniuersitie of Oxford for the use of the publique Librarie there; The Court doth hereby Order, and declare, That euery Printer shall reserve one Book new printed, or reprinted by him, with additions, and shall before any publique venting of the said book, bring it to the Common Hall of the Companie of Stationers, and deliver it to the Officer thereof to be sent to the Librarie at Oxford accordingly vpon paine of imprisonment, and such further Order and Direction therein, as to this Court, or the high Commission Court respectiuely, as the seuerall causes shall require, shall be thought fit.'

At the very time this rigorous edict was passed, Prynne¹, Burton, and Bastwick were lying in various prisons, the earless and

¹ See Gardiner's Pers. Gov. of Charles I (ii. 39, 41), as to Prynne's previous appearances before the Star Chamber.
branded victims of the Court that issued it; but they were presently to be the victors. Their treatment excited the deepest commiseration throughout the country. The Star-Chamber might make its 'Decrees,' but its days were numbered. With the meeting of the Long Parliament its elaborate edict became mere waste paper. In July 1641 an Act was passed for 'regulating the Privy Council, and for taking away the Court commonly called the Star Chamber'; and so this jealous Court expired, never happily, to be revived, though there were not wanting at the Restoration those who would have rejoiced over its renascence.

But the spirit that moved it did not die with it, and was soon perceived merely to have transmigrated into a new body. For a time indeed it was comparatively inoperative and dumb; but in less than three years it began to make its presence once more felt. There soon arose complaints of the unmitigated freedom of discussion that was found to prevail. Those who opened the lips of the nation were astonished at the thronging cries that proceeded from them. Freedom of speech was all very well when an enemy was the object of attack; but when it was themselves that were irreverently canvassed and exposed, it was not quite so free from objection. Moreover 'new heresies,' so called, were springing up every day. Men were striking away from all the proper and respectable highways of thought into paths no decorous person had ever heard of. Whose 'views' were safe from assault? It was altogether uncomfortable to have to be perpetually reconsidering and defending one's creed. This state of things was felt to be singularly 'unsettling.'

Not the least amongst the innovating offenders was Milton himself. His Divorce treatises had greatly scandalized many who had exulted in his succour in the controversy with the bishops in 1641 and 1642. They were denounced from the pulpit in a sermon\(^1\) preached before the two Houses of Parliament in August 1664, and shortly afterwards\(^2\) petitioned against by the Stationers' Company.

Milton then had personal reasons for coming forward as the champion of Unlicensed Printing, and, apart from these personal motives, he was well aware of the animosity his Divorce writings

\(^1\) See Masson's Milton, iii. pp. 162-4 and 263. 
\(^2\) Ibid. 165.
had aroused, for he speaks of 'the world of disesteem' in which he found himself. Possibly, in some pew at St. Margaret's, Westminster, he heard himself spoken of as ‘impudent’ enough to ‘set his name’ 'to a wicked book which was abroad, and uncensured, though deserving to be burnt.' Perhaps there was never incarnate a spirit so impatient of all petty regulation and control as was that of Milton. Not that he meant 'license' when he cried 'liberty,' for his sense of law was as deep as his nature; and, bold thinker as he was, he was ever ready and eager to acknowledge all just and eternal restrictions upon human thought. But for any meancer limitings, they moved in him disdain and indignation.

'For me,' he writes in The Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty, 'I have determined to lay up as the best treasure and solace of a good old age, if God vouchsafe it me, the honest Liberty of free speech, from my youth, where I shall think it available in so dear a concernment as the Church's good.'

His was eminently 'a free and knowing spirit,' and resented, as a fearful ignominny, any attempts to bind and shackle it. Our supreme dramatic poet tells us, in one of his sonnets, of certain sights that 'tired' him, and made him cry for 'restful death'; and amongst the sickening spectacles are

Strength by limping sway disabled,
And art made tongue-tied by authority,
And folly doctor-like controlling skill.

Not other are the visions Milton sees in his Areopagitica:—

'What is it but a servitude, like that imposed by the Philistines, not to be allowed the sharpening of our own axes and coulters, but we must repair from all quarters to twenty licensing forges?

'What advantage is it to be a man over it is to be a boy at school, if we have only scapt the ferular to come under the fescue of an imprimatur?'

But these things do not 'tire' and dishearten Milton. Rather they inflame him with a noble rage; and so, in a very splendour of wrath, he rouses himself to strike them down. He seems 'larger than human,' as he advances to the fray, and the air around is filled with lightnings, and a clear way cleft in front of him with thunderbolts no shields can stay.

βη δὲ διὰ προμάχων κεκορυμένοι αἴβοις χαλκῷ
.. . . φλογὶ ἀκέλος Πεφαίστου
ἀπέβαστο.
INTRODUCTION.

It need scarcely be said that Milton's fitness for the championship he assumed was recognised by others. Indeed it was partly in deference to the urgency of others that he stood forward as he did. Learned men were complaining of the new tyranny—

'And that so generally that when I disclosed myself a companion of their discontent, I might say, if without envy, that he whom an honest questorship had endeared to the Sicilians was not more by them importuned against Verres, than the favourable opinion which I had among many who honour ye, and are known and respected by ye, loaded me with entreaties and persuasions that I would not despair to lay together that which just reason should bring into my mind toward the removal of an undeserved thraldom upon learning.'

SECTION III. THE FORM.

As Milton wished directly to appeal to the Parliament, and not merely to talk at them, it seemed to him well to cast what he had to say in the form of a Speech addressed straight to them. Not that the speech was ever meant to be delivered in the ordinary sense. Just as the best dramatic pieces of the present century were written to be read—not to be seen acted—so this work was meant to be read, not heard delivered. It was meant for the closet, not for the forum. The author ascends an imaginary tribune, and conceives the Lords and Commons of England gathered around to listen. This direct expression suited better the mood of Milton's spirit at the time. He was terribly in earnest, and zealous to strike home. He did not propose merely to discuss the general question at issue, but he longed also to expostulate immediately and fervently with the Government on the character of the policy they were enforcing. It seemed to him no idle matter fit for leisurely disquisition, but a matter of life and death; and so far as might be, he would put aside all intervening obstacles, and say out in the very ears of those whom he would move the thoughts that burned within him. Moreover, it gave no tripling charm in his judgment to this treatment of his subject that precedents for it were, as we shall see, to be found in that Greek literature which was his delight.
INTRODUCTION.

It is to be remembered then, that the Parliament is immediately before the eye of his mind throughout this discourse. The exordium or opening passage is altogether devoted to their praises, and the depreciation of any annoyance that might possibly be created by his boldness in intruding his voice upon them. He says that the mere thought of whom it is his address ‘hath recourse to,’ stirs in him a strange excitement—‘hath got the power within me to a passion far more welcome than incidental to a preface.’ And, indeed, this was no wonder, when we think of the immortal services that ‘High Court’ had done for England. In the subsequent history of the Long Parliament there may be something that is ignoble and mean. It may be that it outlived its vigour, and in its senility sank into folly and contempt; but it is not possible to recall its illustrious youth and the prowess of it without pride and admiration. Milton’s audience was at the time he spoke not unworthy of Milton. And amidst all the eulogies that contemporaries and writers since of all shades of political opinion have bestowed upon that memorable House of Commons, no higher compliment was ever paid to it than when the ardent soul of Milton turned so impetuously towards it to pray for the relaxation of bonds that seemed to stifle the very spirit of freedom. Its past career filled him with confidence for the future.

‘For this is not the liberty which wee can hope, that no grievance ever should arise in the Commonwealth, that let no man in this World expect; but when complaints are freely heard, deeply consider’d, and speedily reform’d, then is the utmost bound of civill liberty attained that wise men looke for. To which if I now manifest by the very sound of this which I shall utter that we are already in good part arriv’d, and yet from such a steepe disadvantage of tyranny and superstition grounded into our principles as was beyond the manhood of a Roman recovery, it will bee attributed first, as is most due, to the strong assistance of God, our deliverer; next, to your faithfull guidance, and un-daunted Wisdome, Lords and Commons of England.’

It has been already said that for this Reading Speech, if we may call it so (as we speak of a Reading Play as opposed to an Acting Play), Milton found Greek example. Indeed it is possible enough that Greek example may have, in the first
instance, suggested the form of the work. Perhaps no one has ever lived in modern times who appreciated more intensely than Milton the excellence of Greek art. His writings abound with professions and testimonies of this distinguishing Hellenism. Thus, in a letter to Leonard Philaros, the Athenian, in 1654, he speaks of himself as ‘A pueritia totius Graeci nominis tua- runque in primis Athenarum cultor, si quis alius’; i.e. ‘as from his boyhood a worshipper, if ever there was one, of all that bore the Greek name, and especially of your Athens.’ In the remarks with which he prefaces Samson Agonistes, he pronounces Aeschylus, Sophokles, and Euripides, ‘the three tragic poets unequalled by any, and the best rule to all who endeavour to write tragedy.’ See the famous passage in the Fourth Book of Paradise Regained, where he describes Athens with an accurate minuteness that is not slightly significant of the frequency and the devotion with which, in thought at least, he had visited that fair metropolis of the world of mind.

‘Look once more, ere we leave this specular mount,
Westward, much nearer by southwest, behold,
Where on the Ægean shore a city stands,
Built nobly, pure the air, and light the soil;
Athens, the eye of Greece, mother of arts
And eloquence, native to famous wits
Or hospitable, in her sweet recess,
City or suburban, studious walks and shades,
See there the olive grove of Academe,
Plato’s retirement, where the Attic bird
Trills her thick-warbled notes the summer long;
There flowery hill Hymettus, with the sound
Of bees’ industrious murmur, oft invites
To studious musing; there Ilissus rolls
His whispering stream: within the walls then view
The schools of ancient sages; his, who bred
Great Alexander to subdue the world,
Lyceum there, and painted Stoa next.’

It was one of the dearest hopes of his youth to visit this Athens in the body, but ‘when I was preparing to pass over into Sicily and Greece, the melancholy intelligence which I received of the civil commotions in England made me alter my purpose; for I thought it base to be travelling abroad while my fellow-citizens

1 Epist. Fam. 15.
INTRODUCTION.

were fighting for liberty at home. It may well be believed that this resignation of his Greek tour was not the least of the sacrifices Milton made at the call of Duty. Such was the fascination of Greek artistic form over him that, as is well known, his first design for his great poem was formed on the model of the Greek drama. Towards the close of his life he did so plan and compose his Samson Agonistes.

The Areopagitica illustrates the influence of Greece upon him scarcely less than the Samson Agonistes. Its name is Greek, and its model was Greek. In the prose work, Isokrates is to the author what Euripides was to him in the dramatic poem. And it is introduced with a Greek motto.

In looking round for parallels to himself, in his oration to the English Parliament in behalf of a Free Press, he naturally turned his eyes to Greece, and the men who in the days of Greece professed the study of wisdom and eloquence. He saw the nearest resemblance to his own case in the Logos Areopagitikos, the Areopagitc Discourse of Isokrates, and he adopted the name, or a mere variation of it. It is Isokrates he means when he speaks of him who from his private house wrote that discourse to the Parliament of Athens that persuades them to change the form of Democracy which was then established. To this same writer he alludes in his Sonnet to the Lady Margaret Ley. The Lady Margaret's father, the Earl of Marlborough, was said to have died broken-hearted by the dissolution of the Parliament of 1628 (Charles I's third Parliament), and Milton finds a parallel in the story that the news of Philip of Macedon's victory over the Athenians in 338 B.C. killed Isokrates. The good Earl, he says, after his retirement from public life, lived on,

1 The Second Defence.
2 From the Suppliants of Euripides, a favourite author with Milton. See Suppl. 438-41. The readings given are such as could not be retained when once the structure of the Iambic was understood. The first line now runs: ὁ δὲ ἐκεῖν ό τὸς θέλει πόλει,

the last, more satisfactorily perhaps:

ὦ σιγή τὸ τούτον ἐστὶς οὐατερον πόλει;

2 See p. 4, l. 5.
3 Ibid. l. 1.
4 Ibid. l. 1.
5 The Parliament was dissolved March 10, 1628-9. Lord Marlborough died on March 14th.
'more in himself content, 
Till the sad breaking of that Parliament 
Broke him; as that dishonest victory 
At Chersones, fatal to liberty, 
Kill'd with report that old man eloquent.'

This 'old man eloquent' was at the time of his death some ninety-eight years of age, being born in 436 B.C. As a young man he had won the highest praise from Sokrates. See Plato's Phaidros, 279 A, when, Lysias having been discussed, Phaidros asks Sokrates what he has to say for Isokrates:—

Δοκεῖ μοι, answers the Sage, ἀμένων ἡ κατὰ τοὺς περὶ Ἀρσιάν εἴναι λόγους τὰ τῆς φύσεως, ἔτι τε ἔθει γεννικτέρω κεκράσθαι. ἔστε οὔδέν ἄν γένοιτο θαυμαστὸν, προϊόνης τῆς ἡλικίας εἰ περὶ αὐτοῦ τε τοὺς λόγους, οἷς νῦν ἐπιχειρεῖ, πλέον ἡ παιδων διενέγκοι τῶν πόποτε ἀφαιμένων λόγων, ἔτι τε, εἰ αὐτὸ μὴ ἀποχρήσαι ταῦτα, ἐπὶ μείζω δὲ τοῖς αὐτῶν ἀγοι ὀρμὴ θεωτέρα. φύσει γὰρ, ὁ φίλε, ἐνεστὶ τις φιλοσοφία τῇ τοῦ ἁνδρὸς διανοίᾳ. 'I think he deserves a higher estimate than we have given Lysias as to natural gifts, and further that he is compounded with a nobler nature; so that it would prove no wonder, as he advances in years, if in respect of the very rhetoric, which he now takes in hand, he should excel all who have ever yet applied themselves to it as if they were scarcely children at it; and further, should such success not suffice him, if a certain diviner impulse should lead him to greater things; for, my friend, there is an inborn philosophical power in his intellect.' Isokrates scarcely fulfilled this high prophecy; but as a rhetorician he became supremely eminent. Physical weakness incapacitated him from the public practice of his art; but he became the most famous teacher of his day, and, what more nearly concerns us, the great composer of Reading Speeches, which enjoyed a wide circulation throughout Greece. Especially noticeable was he for connecting oratory and politics; for before his time the art of speaking, 'with the exception of the panegyrical species, had hitherto been cultivated chiefly for the contest of the courts.'

The drift of his Areopagiticos has already been quoted from Milton himself. Its purpose was in fact to bring back to Athens

* See Lewis' Müllers Hist. of the Literature of Ancient Greece, p. 505.
INTRODUCTION.

the old democracy. It was written 'in the beginning of the
Philippic times'\(^1\) at a critical period in Attic history, τῆς πόλεως
ἐν κυνήγων σύνες ἡ σφαλερώς αὐτῇ τῶν πραγμάτων καθεστάτων,
though men shut their eyes to the perils that encompassed them\(^2\);
and he urges that the only way to avert future dangers, and de-
liver themselves from those already present, is to resolve to recall
the democracy, 'which Solon, who proved so great a friend of the
people ordained by law, and Kleisthenes, who cast out the tyrants
and brought back the people, once more established afresh.'
This was not perhaps the program of a great statesman, but
rather of a visionary, or a 'professor'; for decayed forms of
government are not so easily recalled to life. Certainly, the
wails of a rhetorician over the pulseless body have no power to
re-inspire it. Isokrates proceeds to insist more particularly on
the revival and reinstatement of the Court of the Areopagos\(^3\),
and hence the name of his discourse. He praises its composition,
and the functions it exercised, which he sums up as 'the caring
for good order' (ἐπιμελεῖσθαι τῆς εὐκοσμίας)\(^4\).

Between this speech and that of Milton, as respects subject
matter, there is clearly but a slight resemblance; there is rather
an opposition; for Isokrates aims at recalling an interfering
power, Milton at removing one. What recommended the name
to Milton is, as has already been remarked, the likeness between
his position and that of the Greek. He too 'wrote' 'from his
private house' 'a discourse' on a high political question. As
Isokrates addressed the Boule, so Milton the Parliament. But it
cannot be said that Milton was happy in christening his treatise
as he did. The name is, and will be, a perpetual stumbling-

---

1 Ἐγράφη δ' ὁ λόγος ἐν ἀρχαις τῶν Φιλιππικῶν χρόνων. See the Ἀπόθεσις
ἀρχωμένην γραμματικοῦ.

2 Ἐφράσας γὰρ ταύτην μόνην ἄν γενομένην καὶ τῶν μελλόντων κυνίδων
ἀπετρεπῆς καὶ τῶν παρόντων κακῶν ἀπαλλαγῆς, ἂν ἐβελθοῦμεν ἐκείνην τὴν
δημοκρατίαν ἀναλαβεῖν, ἢν Σύλλων μὲν ὁ δημοκράτατος γενόμενος ἐνομο-
θέτησε, Κλεισθένης δ' ὁ τῶν τυράννων ἐκβαλὼν καὶ τὸν δήμον καταγαγὼν
πάλιν ἐξ ἀρχῆς κατέστησεν. Isokrates' Areop. 143 a.

3 On the Areopagos see Smith's Dict. of Antiquities; Müller's Disser-
tations on the Eumenides of Aeschylus; Hermann's Manual of Grecian
Antiquities; Grote's Greece, ii. 281, &c.

4 See a quotation from this same speech in Ascham's Scholemaster,
p. 58, ed. Arber.
block to the Englishman. How it must have made, and how it makes now, the ordinary Briton 'stare and gasp'! It is essentially an unpopular title, and may be taken as a sign of Milton's indifference to merely popular approval. He cared for 'fit audience, though few' (Par. Lost, vii. 31); to 'be heard only,' if it might be, by the 'elegant and learned reader, to whom principally for a while I shall beg leave I may address myself' (Reason of Church Government, p. 43 of Works); to 'have the good wishes of here and there some,' 'by whom, ever so few though they be, I, for my part, would rather be approved, than by countless companies of unskilled ones, in whom is nothing of mind, or right reason, or sound judgment' (Prolusion I); 'not to seduce the simple and illiterate,' but 'to find out the choicest and the learnedest, who have this high gift of wisdom to answer solidly or to be convinced.'

For the rest there is but little likeness between the styles of the two works. But in this respect, too, a sharp contrast,—that of Isokrates is exquisitely refined and clear, the marble is smoothed to the utmost—'ne quid possit per leve morari.' The immense care he bestowed upon the composition of his orations, and the time he spent in working them out and polishing them, may be inferred from the statement that, he was engaged for a period of ten, and, according to others, of fifteen years upon his Panegyric Oration. The style is the man, and Isokrates' style well reflects Isokrates. Like our poet Pope, he says perspicuously and well what he has to say, but then it is not so very much. The water is pellucid, but then it is not deep. With Milton it was far different. He had more to say than he could say. His thoughts rush upon him in a throng that he can at times scarcely order and control. His utterance is almost choked. He brought to his work an immense mass of knowledge, such as won for him the title of 'learned' in an age of learned men; and at the same time, as we have seen, the profoundest depths of a profound nature were stirred and moved by the character of his enterprise. No wonder then, if at times his eloquence wellnigh overmastered him, bursting forth torrent-like, or

1 See Smith's larger Dict. of Greek and Roman Biography and Mythology, s. v. 'Isocrates,' and the reference there given to Quintilian, x. 4. 4.
flashing out in a fiery shower that would not be confined. The fact is that for the expression of such a genius as that of Milton, a genius so quick and fertile by nature, so splendidly cultivated and enriched by long and eager study, metre was absolutely necessary, not only as its natural form but for the very restraints it imposed. He judged quite justly of himself, when, called by Duty, as he thought, to write prose, he felt himself comparatively inefficient and maimed. 'If I were wise only to mine own ends,' he wrote, 'I should not choose this manner of writing, wherein knowing myself inferior to myself, led by the genial power of nature to another task, I have the use, as I may account, but of my left hand.' It was not natural for him to write in 'the pedestrian manner.' Of him Quintilian's words of Plato are true, but they scarcely say enough: 'Plato multo supra prosam orationem et quam pede-trem (πεζών) Graeci vocant surgit.' Beneath all his prose periods the fire of his poetry may be seen gleaming, and ever and anon it breaks through and blazes up supreme. It is an incalculable loss to our poetical literature that Milton's part in it is comparatively so scanty. Poetry was his 'calling'; he had, in his very youth, recognised it to be so; with a singular devotion and an unparalleled industry he had striven to ripen himself for his work; his 'clear spirit' raised

'To scorn delights and live laborious days;
But the fair guerdon when we hope to find,
And think to burst out into sudden blaze,
Comes the blind Fury.'

She came to Milton not to 'slit the thin-spun life,' but to appoint him a far different lot from that of which he had fondly dreamt. With 'small willingness' he ventured 'to interrupt the pursuit of no less hopes than these, and leave a calm and pleasing solitariness, fed with cheerful and confident thoughts, to embark in a troubled sea of noises and hoarse disputes, put from beholding the bright countenance of truth in the quiet and still air of delightful studies.'

Occasionally the difficulty found in the style of the *Areopagitica*

1 *Reason of Church Government.*
is due to Milton's attempting a Greek arrangement of the words; but, most commonly, it is due to the obscurity to which Elizabethan prose, with its periodic structure, was signally liable in the hands of a writer so impetuous and so abundant as Milton. In his use of this periodic structure Milton was no doubt encouraged by the example of Isokrates, who was famous for his full-flowing expanded sentences. 'In his earlier labours,' says Müller, 'he took as much pains with this symmetrical structure [the antithetical, previously most cultivated] as any Sophist could have done; but in the more flourishing period of his art he contrived to melt down the rigidity and stiffness of the antithesis, by breaking through the direct and immediate opposition of sentences, and by marshalling them in successive groups and a longer series.' With him the result, thanks partly to his own nature, as we have said above, and partly to the character of the language in which he wrote—a language in which, through the variety of its inflexions, and, still more, through its richness in particles, or links (δείγμα), as they were called, complexity is possible without intricacy—is not obscurity but clearness. With Milton, it must be allowed, the danger of obscurity is not always avoided. The reader had needs be careful, or he will lose the main path, and find himself in what seems at first a hopeless labyrinth. It is easy, however, to exaggerate this peril. Perhaps all that is really needed by the student is great care. Milton's periods are not really mere confused tangles of ornate phraseology, as listening to some critics one might be led to suppose.

Milton is the last great writer in the old periodic style. Not a greater change came over our poetry than over our prose in the latter half of the seventeenth century. Dryden's Essays differ in style from Milton's pamphlets as much as his Fables from Paradise Lost. There is no one who does not admire the brilliant transparency of the style of the later writer, and the good service he did for us in impressing that virtue upon our literature. It would be a narrow criticism, that, fascinated by that sovereign charm, should fail to recognise what is worthy and noble in the older writer. Milton's sentences possess a stately majesty that belongs to a different sphere from that which gave birth to Dryden.
"Another race hath been, and other palms are won."

"There were giants in those days"; and let not the generation that succeeds disparage their mighty predecessors. In a sense Milton was the last of the Titans, and his style is Titanic.

"Thou hadst a voice whose sound was like the Sea."

SECTION IV. THE RESULT.

It was not till 'after many days'—not till after his own eyes were closed in death—that the bread Milton cast upon the waters was seen. The Press was not delivered from Licensors till 1694—just twenty years after the decease of their great opponent; just half a century after the publication of the Areopagitica.

From the Presbyterians indeed, who were in power in 1644, there was nothing to be hoped. Mention has already been made of the bitter discovery which Milton and kindred free spirits were to have forced upon them—that, in exchanging Convocation for Synod, they had but substituted one tyranny for another. And thus, for all the impassioned appeals of the Areopagitica, the Parliament did not relax the Ordinance, which was, in fact, as we have seen, but an old Star-Chamber decree re-enacted. This Ordinance was in some sort repealed or re-inforced in 1647, 1649, and 1652. A warrant of Lord-General Fairfax, dated January 9, directs Captain Richard Lawrence, Marshal-General of 'the Army under my command,' in virtue of the Parliamentary Ordinance of 1649 (dated January 5), to put in execution the previous enactments concerning 'scandalous and unlicensed pamphlets.' The Marshal-General is 'required and authorized to take into custody any person or persons who have offended or shall hereafter offend, against the said Ordinances, and inflict upon them such corporal punishments, and levy such penalties upon them for each offence, as are therein mentioned, and not discharge them till they have made full payment thereof, and received the said punishment accordingly.' And he is further authorized and required to make diligent search 'from time to

1 See Kerr's Blackstone, iv. 161, note; Scobell's Acts and Ordinances.
time, in all places wherein he shall think meet, for all unlicensed printing presses any way employed in printing scandalous and unlicensed papers, pamphlets, books, or ballads, and to search for such unlicensed books, papers, treatises,' &c. But even in those dark days Milton made at least one convert, and we may well believe that throughout the country those who had ears to hear heard him, although there might be no public response. This one convert was one of the Licensers, Gilbert Mabbott by name. When in May 1649 he resigned his post, he gave reasons for this step that were clearly derived from the Areopagitica¹.

When the Independents rose into power, though there was no formal repeal of the stringent ordinances of the Long Parliament, yet they were no longer executed, at least so far as matters of religious opinion were concerned, with the rigour their predecessors had practised, or desired. The office of Licenser fell into abeyance. Religious tolerance had long been the watchword of the Independents, and it redounds to their glory that they did not, after attaining power, discredit the professions they had made when smarting under the coercions of others. It is true that their notion of tolerance was imperfect, as indeed was that of Milton and of Jeremy Taylor; that they excepted Roman Catholics; that they once or twice inflicted punishment on antitrinitarians; that they ordered certain blasphemous books to be burned; that they prohibited the Episcopalian worship. Something might readily be said by way of apology for these defections from the highest ideal. But this defence unattempted, it remains true that they were the first party in England, perhaps in Europe, that distinctly professed the principle of religious toleration as a practical principle of their politics, and that after the overthrow of the Presbyterians they adhered in success to the creed of their adversity. With regard to political writings during the Commonwealth, the peculiar position of the government must be remembered. It is clear that a free political Press is not easily compatible with a rule that is not firmly based on the national consent. And, however decidedly we may reject the old royalist legends of Cromwell’s selfish ambition and

remorseless tyranny,—to whatever degree we may sympathize with Milton's admiration for

"Our chief of men, who through a cloud
Not of war only, but detractions rude,
Guided by faith and matchless fortitude,
To peace and truth thy glorious way hast plough'd,
And on the neck of crowned Fortune proud
Hast rear'd God's trophies, and His work pursu'd,"—

whatever pride we may take in his foreign policy, that made the English name respected and potent throughout Europe as scarcely ever before or since,—yet it must be confessed that the Protector governed a reluctant people, and was encompassed at home by discontents and threatenings and treacheries. Not all his merits could overcome the enormous difficulties of the situation: for partly they were not recognised at all; partly they were in the eyes of a great mass of the nation more than counterbalanced by what were thought to be egregious errors and defects. Hence, in mere self-defence, it seemed that private presses could not be allowed, and that allowed presses must be regulated. It was ordered in October 1653 (some two months before the Protectorate was formally established) that no person should presume to publish in print any matter of public news or intelligence without leave and approbation of the Secretary of State.

A government obnoxious to the prejudices of the country, and that could not with safety to itself permit political matters to be freely discussed, could not be expected to stand. When the strong hand of Cromwell was relaxed by death, there was no vital force left in the political system he had organized; and after nine months of imminent chaos the nation, whose loyalty had never expired, but had of late years burned fervently, however silently, turned once more to its old traditions.

With the Restoration the old régime was for the most part revived. It was even proposed by some ardent spirits to recall the Star Chamber into life; but, wild as was the reactionary enthusiasm of the day, they failed to achieve such a dismal resurrection. But the old restrictions of the Press were once more rigorously enforced. In 1662 the office of License...
revived, the Judges, certain officers of state, and the Archbishop of Canterbury, being appointed to supervise various departments of literature. In 1663 Roger L'Estrange was appointed Licenser—an appointment he seems to have held, possibly with an intermission, till the Revolution, when he was succeeded by one Fraser, who, probably for some negligence in the discharge of his functions—it is said for having allowed to be printed Dr. Walker's *True Account of the Author of Eikon Basilike*—was presently dismissed, when Edmund Bohun, a Suffolk justice, took his place. Bohun was to be the last of the Licensers, for the system had entered upon its last generation when it was reinstituted by Charles II.

The Act of 1662 was, in short, but a new version of the previous parliamentary ordinances; and a proclamation was issued 'for suppressing the printing and publishing unlicensed news-books and pamphlets of news, because it has become a common practice for evil-disposed persons to vend to his Majesty's people all the idle and malicious reports that they could collect or invent, contrary to law; the continuance whereof would, in a short time, endanger the peace of the kingdom; the same manifestly tending thereto, as has been declared by all his Majesty's subjects unanimously.' L'Estrange, himself a virulent pamphleteer and acrid journalist both before and after the Restoration, was not idle in his office; and so our literature, under his dictatorship, was subjected to perpetual mutilation. 'The sponge' was ever in his hand, and he slurred and rubbed without compunction. Out of many instances of the manner in which this censorial jurisdiction was exercised by him, or by his assessors, Milton himself may be cited. It appears that *Paradise Lost* was itself in danger. The suspicious eye of the licensor—the Rev. Thomas Tomkyns, one of the chaplains of Archbishop Sheldon—had lighted upon certain lines in Book I; see 594–600.

'As when the sun new ris'n
Looks through the horizontal misty air
Shorn of his beams, or from behind the moon
In dim eclipse disastrous twilight sheds

\[13\text{ and }14\text{ Car. II. c. 33.}\]

\[3\text{ See p. }12.\]
INTRODUCTION.

On half the nations, and with fear of change
Perplexes monarchs. Dark'n'd so, yet shone
Above them all th' Archangel.*

The sensitive royalist, it is said, smelt treason in this mention of monarchs perplexed with fear of change, and pondered whether he should not suppress the whole work, though indeed a free excision might have satisfied the requirements of the case. That he permitted to pass unchallenged other passages of the poem, as I. 497–502, VII. 23–38, XII. 13–104, may perhaps excite surprise. Possibly he may have thought it not worth his while to revise too severely 'a work that seemed so little in harmony with the taste of the time, and therefore so little likely to enjoy any wide popularity. In the case of another of his writings Milton did not escape so easily. His History of Britain actually suffered laceration. Several passages, describing the pride and superstition of the 'Saxon' monks were, it is said, taken to be aimed at the prelates of his own time, and were accordingly expunged. If this was his interpretation, the licensor blundered oddly, for the passages certainly portray the Long Parliament and the Assembly of Divines. The current story may not perhaps do the licensor justice. According to Richardson the passages had been excised 'as being a sort of digression, and in order to avoid giving offence to a party quite subdued, and whose faults the government were then willing to have forgotten.' The licensor might expunge, but he could not destroy them. 'Milton gave a copy of the proscribed remarks to the Earl of Anglesea, which were published in 1681, with a preface declaring that they originally belonged to the third book of his history, and they are now found in their proper place.' Thus Milton suffered himself the degradation he mentions with such keen abhorrence in the Areopagitica.2 Amongst the many bitternesses his great heart was destined to know, in the course of his vexed life, this assuredly was not the least. Not to be counted 'fit to print his mind without a tutor and examiner,' was, he held, 'the greatest

---

1 See Todd's Milton's Poetical Works, i. 209, ed. 1826.
2 See the passage in Prose Works, 502–504. It begins, 'Of those who swayed most in the late troubles,' &c.; and ends, 'which give us matter of this digression.'
INTRODUCTION.

displeasure and indignity to a free and knowing spirit that can be put upon him.' One may imagine the profound contempt, and also the sad anguish—one may scorn one's foes, but yet their arrows pierce us—with which, in his retired house in Artillery Walk, he would hear of the insolent scrutinies of the precious life-blood of his 'master spirit,' with whose embalming and treasuring up on purpose to a life beyond life, coarse hands were thus rudely interfering.

The Act of 1662 expired in 1679. It was formally renewed in 1685, and continued till 1692. In 1692 it was re-enacted for two more years. When it lapsed in 1694 it lapsed for ever, in spite of various advocacies and clamours repeated from time to time.

In his account of the final extinction in 1694 of a power so formidable and so perilous, Macaulay well points out how quietly and unobservedly it happened. When the question was put in the House of Commons 'That the House do agree with the Committee on the Resolution that the Act, entitled an Act for preventing Abuses in printing Seditious, treasonable, and unlicensed Pamphlets, and for regulating of Printing and Printing Presses be continued,' 'the Speaker pronounced that the Noes had it,' and the Ayes did not think fit to divide. The Lords, indeed, proposed to continue it; but when the Commons presently set forth their objections in a paper delivered to the Lords, and these objections all related to matters of detail, being many of them what Milton would have called 'arguments of merchandize,' 'the Lords yielded without a contest.'

'The Lords yielded without a contest. They probably expected that some less objectionable bill for the regulation of the press would soon be sent up to them, and, in fact, such a bill was brought into the House of Commons, read twice, and referred to a Select Committee. But the Session closed before the Committee had reported, and English literature was emancipated, and emancipated for ever, from the control of the Government.'

In subsequent years—in 1697, in 1703, in 1713—the subject was again mooted, for there were not wanting outside the walls of Parliament those who called upon the House to re-impose

1 See p. 6.  2 See Macaulay's Hist. of England, ii. 162, ed. 1861.  3 Ibid. vii. 169, ed. 1861.
the old restraints. Thus there appeared a Modest Plea for the Due regulation of the Press, in Answer to reasons lately printed against it, humbly submitted to the judgment of authority, by Francis Gregory, D.D., and Rector of Hambledon, in the County of Bucks: London, 1698; ‘A Letter to a Member of Parliament showing the Necessity of regulating the Press: Oxford, 1699'; and other similar appeals. But they were made in vain. In later times there have been some who have sighed or cried aloud for the old supervision, or, at least, have been prone to believe that the absence of it begat not so much liberty as license. Thus Hume writes of the event of 1694, projecting, it may be thought, his own views into his account of it:—

‘To the great displeasure of the King and his Ministers, who seeing nowhere, in any Government during present or past ages, any example of such unlimited freedom, doubted much of its salutary effects, and probably thought that no books or writings would ever so much improve the general understanding of men as to render it safe to entrust them with an indulgence so easily abused.'

‘And the present moment,' remarks the author of the Curiosities of Literature, first published 1791–1817, after quoting the above words, ‘verifies the prescient conjecture of the philosopher. Such is the licentiousness of our press that some, not perhaps the most hostile to the cause of freedom, would not be averse to manacle authors once more with an Imprimatur.'

And so there will be always some who will forget, under the pressure of certain disadvantages, all the blessings that a Free Press has conferred upon us, who, in the sun, will see nothing but spots, or, in the spring time, a mere carnival of east winds. Moreover, is the abuse of a thing to be truly and permanently cured by restraining the use of it? If a man handles his sword awkwardly, so that he wounds his friends and himself rather than the enemy, will his dexterity be improved by taking his weapon from him? Or shall we not better teach him a more judicious management?

1 The pamphlet especially referred to is ‘A Letter to a Member of Parliament, showing that a restraint on the Press is inconsistent with the Protestant religion, and dangerous to the liberties of the nation.'
INTRODUCTION.

But, to return to the Areopagitica, it may appear perhaps, from the account given above of the end of Press-licensing, that Milton did little or nothing towards the achievement of it, inasmuch as the general question with which his work deals was not at all discussed when that end came. But it would be rash for this reason to conclude that Milton spent his strength for nought. It is, in fact, impossible to estimate what the influence of his discourse may have been between 1644 and 1694. The influence of a book is not to be judged so much by the quantity, as by the quality, of its readers. And one can scarcely doubt that the words of the Areopagitica sank deep into the hearts of the better spirits of the time. To them it was addressed, and only to them was it fully intelligible. It could not be expected to have a large general circulation, but it was held a sovereign work in its own sphere. It was regarded as a central spring, to which others might resort.

‘Hither as to their fountain other stars
Repairing, in their urns draw golden light.’

We have noticed its influence upon Mabbott; and so in other cases we find its arguments reproduced. Thus a pamphlet called ‘A Just Vindication of Learning, or an Humble Address to the High Court of Parliament in behalf of the Liberty of the Press, by Philopatris: London, 1679,’ is neither more nor less than a mutilated copy of the Areopagitica. A work entitled ‘Reasons humbly offered for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing, 1693,’ is simply an abridgment of it.

Nor is our estimate of the result of the Areopagitica to be limited by the year 1694. All that it had to teach was not finally taught when the licensing system formally ceased; nor was it then to be thrown away, like a ticket that has served its purpose. It was published separately in 1738, in 1772, in 1792, in 1819, in 1868; with the ‘Tractat of Education’ in 1780; with other tracts in 1809. Mirabeau’s tract, ‘Sur la Liberté de la Presse,’ 1788, is merely a reproduction of it. ‘Le titre de ce morceau très singulier, où j’ai suivi de beaucoup plus près mon Auteur que ne voudront le croire ceux qui ne consulteront pas l’original, et où j’ai plutôt retranché qu’ajouté; ce titre est:
INTRODUCTION.


Lastly, our judgment of what power the Areopagitica has exercised in the world must not confine itself to the Printing Press and its history; for the work is indeed not only a magnificent protest in behalf of unlicensed books, but an immortal defence of Free Thought. Jeremy Taylor's Liberty of Prophesying, Locke's Letters on Toleration, John Stuart Mill's Liberty—these are works of no temporary and transient value, however they may have been called forth by passing circumstances; and amongst these, and not the least amongst them, is to be ranked the Areopagitica. It is inspired by the very spirit of freedom. It is the own voice of a mind resolute to be free and fetterless, and to dare usurpation to its face.

SECTION V. THE PRESENT EDITION.

The text of the present edition is that of the original edition of 1644, with only one intentional difference, viz. warfaring, for wayfaring, on p. 18; on which see the note. It was printed in the first instance from Mr. Arber's Reprint, and then collated with the 1644 edition, of which Mr. Arber's reprint was found to be an extremely faithful reproduction, the corrections that had to be made being very few and very slight.

For the rest, I have to express great obligations to Holt White's edition of 1819, as indeed every one must who studies the Areopagitica. His 'Prefatory Remarks, Copious Notes, and Excursive Illustrations,' are a very storehouse of information, of which frequent mention is made in the Notes, where I have, I believe, always acknowledged any debt incurred in this and all other cases. Next in value to Holt White's volume is Mr. Lobb's 'Modern Version of Milton's Areopagitica, with Notes, Appendix, and Tables: Calcutta, 1872.' Possibly enough, if Mr. Lobb designed his work for Indian readers, he was right in translating the original into modern English; but there can scarcely be any Englishmen who would accept Mr. Lobb's

1 See Buckle's Civilization, ii. 225.
version, however vigorously executed, in exchange for Milton's own. The notes contain much valuable matter; it is a pity they are not made more accessible by a better arrangement. 'Milton's Areopagitica, a Commentary,' privately printed, by Mr. R. C. Jebb, the Public Orator of Cambridge, for a copy of which I have to thank the author, contains some excellent suggestions. There is also an edition by Mr. T. G. Osborn, Head Master of New Kingswood School, Bath, with some notes that are 'mainly taken from sources obvious and easily accessible and make no pretensions to original or extensive research.'

Lastly, I must do myself the pleasure of thanking my friend, Mr. Skeat, the well-known Old English scholar, for various valuable suggestions. I have also to thank for sundry kind services the Rev. G. W. Kitchin, of Christ Church, Oxford; Professor Morley, University College, and Dr. Morris, King's College School, London; Professor Seeley, Cambridge; and Professor Ward, Owens College, Manchester.

1 Oppidans Road, Primrose Hill, London;

August 1st, 1874.

In the second issue of 'the present edition' certain misprints have been corrected, one or two notes withdrawn as unnecessary, and a few additions made.

I had intended to add some remarks on the fact that Milton himself, after writing this 'discourse,' acted as a Licensor of the Press. But the urgent demand for this edition leaves no time now for this consideration.

I may just say that though I have given here the original orthography, I am by no means of opinion this should always be done in reprinting old books for school or for general use. Mr. R. C. Browne, in his well-known useful edition of Milton's English Poems, has, I do not doubt, acted judiciously in modernising the spelling. But it will be allowed that occasionally an exacter reproduction should be given; and here is one.

Oct. 8, 1878.
This Third Edition is a mere reprint of the Second.

I had intended to consider here at some length the fact hastily mentioned in the Preface to the Second Edition—that Milton himself, after writing this 'discourse,' acted as a Licensor of the Press. But this fact is so fully discussed by Professor Masson in the fourth volume, pp. 324-335, and pp. 432, 433, of his exhaustive and invaluable work 'The Life of Milton in Connexion with the History of his Time,' that little remains to be said, or rather, if one went into the subject, one could only repeat what has been already written: therefore I will merely briefly state how the case really stood, referring the reader for an ampler account to Professor Masson's volume.

Milton acted as a 'Licensor of the Press,' merely so far as this: he was for a time—from the beginning of the year 1651 to the beginning of 1652—connected as a sort of supervisor with one of the current journals published in the interest of the Commonwealth. Each one of these organs had a censor attached to it. The Several Proceedings in Parliament was inspected, so to speak, and allowed by Mr. Henry Scobell, the Clerk of the Parliament; A Perfect Diurnall of some Passages of the Armies, by Mr. John Rushworth, the Army Secretary; A Briefe Relation of Some Affairs and Transactions, by Mr. Gualter Frost, the General Secretary of the Council of State. And just in the same way the Mercurius Politicus was entrusted to the discretion of Mr. John Milton, Latin Secretary to the Council for their Letters to foreign Princes and States.

There is no sign of Milton's acting as a Press-licenser in any other way. He was 'often employed to report on papers or pamphlets after they were published'—to officially review them in fact; but not to authorize or license them.

It thus appears that Milton's 'licensing' meant little, or nothing, more than acting as a superior—a final—editor to one of the newspapers issued by the party to which he belonged. We presume that the unfriendliest eye could scarcely discover in such a function anything irreconcilable with the views so nobly and ardently asserted in the Areopagitica.

King's College, London,

Jan. 7, 1882.
AREOPAGITICA.
AREOPAGITICA.

For the Liberty of unlicenc’d Printing.

They who to States and Governours of the Commonwealth direct their Speech, High Court of Parliament, or wanting such accessse in a private condition, write that which they foresee may advance the publick good, I suppose them, as at the beginning of no meane en-deavour, not a little alter’d and mov’d inwardly in their mindes: some with doubt of what will be the successse, others with feare of what will be the censure; some with hope, others with confidence of what they have to speake. And me perhaps each of these dispositions, as the subject was whereon I enter’d, may have at other times variously affected; and likely might in these formost expressions now also disclose which of them sway’d most, but that the very attempt of this ad-dresse thus made, and the thought of whom it hath re-course to, hath got the power within me to a passion, farre more welcome then incidentall to a Preface. Which though I stay not to confessse ere any aske, I shall be blamelesse, if it be no other then the joy and gratulation which it brings to all who wish and promote their Countries liberty; whereof this whole Discourse propos’d will be a certaine testimony, if not a Trophey. For this is not the liberty which wee can hope, that no grievance
ever should arise in the Commonwealth, that let no man in this World expect; but when complaints are freely heard, deeply consider'd, and speedily reform'd, then is the utmost bound of civil liberty attain'd, that wise men looke for. To which if I now manifest by the very sound of this which I shall utter that wee are already in good part arriv'd, and yet from such a steepe disadvantage of tyranny and superstition grounded into our principles as was beyond the manhood of a Roman recovery, it will bee attributed first, as is most due, to the strong assistance of God our deliverer, next to your faithfull guidance and undaunted Wisdome, Lords and Commons of England. Neither is it in Gods esteeme the diminution of his glory, when honourable things are spoken of good men and worthy Magistrates; which if I now first should begin to doe, after so fair a progresse of your laudable deeds, and such a long obligement upon the whole Realme to your indefatigable vertues, I might be justly reckn'd among the tardiest and the unwillingest of them that praise yee. Nevertheless there being three principall things, without which all praising is but Courtship and flattery, First, when that only is prais'd which is solidly worth praise: next, when greatest likeli-hoods are brought that such things are truly and really in those persons to whom they are ascrib'd: the other, when he who praises, by shewing that such his actuall perswasion is of whom he writes, can demonstrate that he flatters not, the former two of these I have hereto-fore, endeavour'd, rescuing the employment from him who went about to impaire your merits with a triviall and malignant Encomium: the latter as belonging chiefly to mine owne acquittall, that whom I so extoll'd I did not flatter, hath been reserv'd opportunely to this occasion.
For he who freely magnifies what hath been nobly done, and fears not to declare as freely what might be done better, gives ye the best cov’nant of his fidelity, and that his loyallest affection and his hope waits on your proceedings. His highest praising is not flattery, and his plainest advice is a kinde of praising; for though I should affirme and hold by argument, that it would fare better with truth, with learning, and the Commonwealth, if one of your publisht Orders which I should name, were call’d in, yet at the same time it could not but much redound to the lustre of your milde and equall Government, when as private persons are hereby animated to thinke ye better pleas’d with publick advice then other statists have been delighted heretofore with publicke flattery. And men will then see what difference there is between the magnanimity of a trienniall Parliament and that jealous hautinessse of Prelates and cabin Counsellours that usurpt of late, when as they shall observe yee in the midd’st of your Victories and successes more gently brooking writ’n exceptions against a voted Order then other Courts, which had produc’t nothing worth memory but the weake ostentation of wealth, would have endur’d the least signifi’d dislike at any sudden Proclamation. If I should thus farre presume upon the meek demeanour of your civill and gentle greatnesse, Lords and Commons, as what your publisht Order hath directly said, that to gainsay, I might defend my selfe with ease, if any should accuse me of being new or insolent, did they but know how much better I find ye esteem it to imitate the old and elegant humanity of Greece then the barbarick pride of a Hunnish and Norwegian state-lines. And out of those ages, to whose polite wisdom and letters we ow that we are not yet Gothes and Jutlanders,
I could name him who from his private house wrote that discourse to the Parliament of Athens, that persuades them to change the forme of Democracy which was then establisht. Such honour was done in those 5 dayes to men who profest the study of wisdome and eloquence, not only in their own Country, but in other Lands, that Cities and Sinories heard them gladly and with great respect, if they had ought in publick to admonish the State. Thus did Dion Prusaeus a stranger and a privat Orator counsell the Rhodians against a former Edict: and I abound with other like examples, which to set heer would be superfluous. But if from the industry of a life wholly dedicated to studious labours, and those naturall endowments haply not the worst for two and fifty degrees of northern latitude, so much must be derogated as to count me not equall to any of those who had this priviledge, I would obtain to be thought not so inferior as your selves are superior to the most of them who receiv'd their counsell: and how farre you excell them, be assur'd, Lords and Commons, there can no greater testimony appear then when your prudent spirit acknowledges and obeyes the voice of reason from what quarter soever it be heard speaking; and renders ye as willing to repeal any Act of your own setting forth as any set forth by your Predecessors.

If ye be thus resolv'd, as it were injury to thinke ye were not, I know not what should withhold me from presenting ye with a fit instance wherein to shew both that love of truth which ye eminently professe, and that uprightnesse of your judgement which is not wont to be partiall to your selves, by judging over again that Order which ye have ordain'd to regulate Printing: That no Book, pamphlet, or paper shall be henceforth Printed,
unlesse the same be first approv'd and licenc't by such, or at least one of such as shall be thereto appointed. For that part which preserves justly every mans Copy to himselfe, or provides for the poor, I touch not, only wish they be not made pretenses to abuse and persecute honest and painfull Men, who offend not in either of these particulars. But that other clause of Licencing Books, which we thought had dy'd with his brother quadragesimal and matrimonial when the Prelats expir'd, I shall now attend with such a Homily as shall lay before ye, first the inventors of it to bee those whom ye will be loath to own; next what is to be thought in generall of reading, what ever sort the Books be; and that this Order avails nothing to the suppressing of scandalous, seditious, and libellous Books, which were mainly intended to be suppress'd; last, that it will be primely to the discouragement of all learning, and the stop of Truth, not only by the disexercising and blunting our abilities in what we know already, but by hindring and cropping the discovery that might bee yet further made both in religious and civil Wisdome.

I deny not but that it is of greatest concernment in the Church and Commonwealth, to have a vigilant eye how Bookes demane themselves as well as men; and thereafter to confine, imprison, and do sharpest justice on them as malefactors: For Books are not absolutely dead things, but doe contain a potencie of life in them to be as active as that soule was whose progeny they are; nay, they do preserve as in a violl the purest efficacie and extraction of that living intellect that bred them. I know they are as lively, and as vigorously productive, as those fabulous Dragons teeth; and being sown up and down, may chance to spring up armed men. And
yet on the other hand, unless wariness be us'd, as good
almost kill a Man as kill a good Book; who kills a Man
kills a reasonable creature, God's Image; but hee who
destroyes a good Booke, kills reason it selfe, kills the
5 Image of God as it were in the eye. Many a man lives
a burden to the Earth; but a good Booke is the preetious
life-blood of a master spirit, imbalm'd and treasur'd up
on purpose to a life beyond life. 'Tis true, no age can
restore a life, whereof perhaps there is no great losse;
10 and revolutions of ages doe not oft recover the losse of
a rejected truth, for the want of which whole Nations
fare the worse. We should be wary therefore what per-
secution we raise against the living labours of publick
men, how we spill that season'd life of man preserv'd
15 and stor'd up in Books; since we see a kinde of homicide
may be thus committed, sometimes a martyrdom, and
if it extend to the whole impression, a kinde of massacre,
whereof the execution ends not in the slaying of an ele-
mentall life, but strikes at that ethereall and fift essence,
20 the breath of reason it selfe, slaes an immortality rather
then a life. But lest I should be condemn'd of intro-
ducing licence, while I oppose Licencing, I refuse not
the paines to be so much Historicall as will serve to
shew what hath been done by ancient and famous Com-
25 monwealths against this disorder, till the very time that
this project of licencing crept out of the Inquisition, was
catcht up by our Prelates, and hath caught some of our
Presbyters.

In Athens where Books and Wits were ever busier
30 then in any other part of Greece, I finde but only two
sorts of writings which the Magistrate car'd to take no-
tice of: those either blasphemous and Atheisticall, or
Libellous. Thus the Books of Protagoras were by the
Judges of Areopagus commanded to be burnt, and himselfe banisht the territory, for a discourse begun with his confessing not to know whether there were gods, or whether not: And against defaming, it was decreed that none should be traduc'd by name, as was the manner of Vetus Comoedia, whereby we may guesse how they censur'd libelling: And this course was quick enough, as Ciceron writes, to quell both the desperate wits of other Atheists, and the open way of defaming, as the event shew'd. Of other sects and opinions though tending to voluptuousnesse and the denying of divine providence they tooke no heed. Therefore we do not read that either Epicurus, or that libertine school of Cyrene, or what the Cynick impudence utter'd, was ever question'd by the Laws. Neither is it recorded that the writings of those old Comedians were suppress'd, though the acting of them were forbid; and that Plato commended the reading of Aristophanes the loosest of them all to his royall scholler Dionysius, is commonly known, and may be excus'd, if holy Chrysostome, as is reported, nightly studied so much the same Author and had the art to cleanse a scurrilous vehemence into the stile of a rousing Sermon. That other leading City of Greece, Lacedaemon, considering that Lycurgus their Law-giver was so addicted to elegant learning as to have been the first that brought out of Ionia the scatter'd workes of Homer, and sent the Poet Thales from Creet to prepare and mollifie the Spartan surlinesse with his smooth songs and odes, the better to plant among them law and civility, it is to be wonder'd how museless and unbookish they were, minding nought but the feats of Warre. There needed no licencing of Books among them, for they dislik'd all but their owne Laconick Apo-
thegms, and took a slight occasion to chase Archilochus out of their City, perhaps for composing in a higher straine then their owne sooldierly ballats and roundels could reach to; Or if it were for his broad verses, they were not therein so cautious but they were as dissolute in their promiscuous conversing; whence Euripides affirms in Andromache, that their women were all unchaste. Thus much may give us light after what sort Bookes were prohibited among the Greeks. The Romans also for many ages train'd up only to a military roughnes, resembling most of the Lacedaemonian guise, knew of learning little but what their twelve Tables, and the Pontifick College with their Augurs and Flamins taught them in Religion and Law, so unacquainted with other learning that when Carneades and Critolaus with the Stoick Diogenes, comming Embassadors to Rome, tooke thereby occasion to give the City a tast of their Philosophy, they were suspected for seducers by no lesse a man then Cato the Censor, who mov'd it in the Senat to dismisse them speedily, and to banish all such Attick bablers out of Italy. But Scipio and others of the noblest Senators withstood him and his old Sabin austerity; honour'd and admir'd the men; and the Censor himself at last in his old age fell to the study of that whereof before hee was so scrupulous. And yet at the same time Naevius and Plautus the first Latine comedians had fill'd the City with all the borrow'd Scenes of Menander and Philemon. Then began to be consider'd there also what was to be don to libellous books and Authors; for Naevius was quickly cast into prison for his unbridl'd pen, and releas'd by the Tribunes upon his recantation; We read also that libels were burnt, and the makers punisht by Augustus. The like severity no
doubt was us'd if ought were impiously writ'n against their esteemed gods. Except in these two points, how the world went in Books, the Magistrat kept no reckoning. And therefore Lucretius without impeachment versifies his Epicurism to Memmius, and had the honour to be set forth the second time by Cicero so great a father of the Commonwealth; although himselfe disputes against that opinion in his own writings. Nor was the Satyrical sharpnesse, or naked plainnes of Lucilius, or Catullus, or Flaccus, by any order prohibited. And for matters of State, the story of Titus Livius, though it extoll'd that part which Pompey held, was not therefore supprest by Octavius Caesar of the other Faction. But that Naso was by him banisht in his old age for the wanton Poems of his youth, was but a meer covert of State over some secret cause; and besides, the Books were neither banisht nor call'd in. From hence we shall meet with little else but tyranny in the Roman Empire, that we may not marvell if not so often bad as good Books were silenc't. I shall therefore demean to have bin large enough in producing what among the ancients was punishable to write, save only which all other arguments were free to treat on.

By this time the Emperours were become Christians, whose discipline in this point I doe not finde to have bin more severe then what was formerly in practice. The Books of those whom they took to be grand Hereticks were examin'd, refuted, and condemn'd in the generall Councils; and not till then were prohibited, or burnt by authority of the Emperor. As for the writings of Heathen authors, unless they were plaine invectives against Christianity, as those of Porphyrius and Proclus, they met with no interdict that can be
cited till about the year 400 in a Carthaginian Council, wherein Bishops themselves were forbid to read the Books of Gentiles, but Heresies they might read: while others long before them on the contrary scrupled more the Books of Heretics then of Gentiles. And that the primitive Councils and Bishops were wont only to declare what Books were not commendable, passing no further, but leaving it to each one's conscience to read or to lay by, till after the year 800, is observ'd already by Padre Paolo the great unmasker of the Trentine Council. After which time the Popes of Rome, engrossing what they pleas'd of Politicall rule into their own hands, extended their dominion over mens eyes, as they had before over their judgements, burning and prohibiting to be read what they fancied not; yet sparing in their censures, and the Books not many which they so dealt with; till Martin the 5. by his Bull not only prohibited, but was the first that excommunicated the reading of heretical Books; for about that time Wicklif and Husse growing terrible were they who first drove the Papall Court to a stricter policy of prohibiting. Which cours Leo the 10 and his successors follow'd, until the Council of Trent and the Spanish Inquisition engendering together brought forth or perfected those Catalogues and expurgering Indexes that rake through the entrails of many an old good Author with a violation worse than any could be offer'd to his tomb. Nor did they stay in matters Hereticall, but any subject that was not to their palat they either condemn'd in a prohibition, or had it strait into the new Purgatory of an Index. To fill up the measure of encroachment, their last invention was to ordain that no Book, pamphlet, or paper should be Printed (as if S. Peter had bequeath'd them
the keys of the Presse also out of Paradise) unlesse it were approv'd and licenc't under the hands of 2 or 3 glutton Friers. For example:

Let the Chancellor Cini be pleas'd to see if in this present work be contain'd ought that may withstand the Printing,

Vincent Rabatta Vicar of Florence.

I have seen this present work, and finde nothing athwart the Catholick faith and good manners; In witnesse whereof I have given, &c.

Nicolo Cini, Chancellor of Florence.

Attending the precedent relation, it is allow'd that this present work of Davansati may be Printed,

Vincent Rabatta, &c.

It may be Printed, July 15.

Friar Simon Mompei d'Amelia Chancellor of the holy office in Florence.

Sure they have a conceit, if he of the bottomlesse pit had not long since broke prison, that this quadruple exorcism would barre him down. I feare their next designe will be to get into their custody the licencing of that which they say Claudius intended, but went not through with. Voutsafe to see another of their forms the Roman stamp:

Imprimatur, If it seem good to the reverend Master of the holy Palace,

Belcastro, Viceregent.

Imprimatur,

Friar Nicolo Rodolphi Master of the holy Palace.

Sometimes 5 Imprimatur are seen together dialoguewise in

1 Qno veniam daret flatum crepitumque ventris in convivio emittendi. Sueton. in Claudio.
the Piazza of one Title page, complementing and ducking each to other with their shav'n reverences, whether the Author, who stands by in perplexity at the foot of his Epistle, shall to the Presse or to the spunge. These are the pretty responsories, these are the deare Antiphonies that so bewitcht of late our Prelats and their Chaplaines with the goodly Eccho they made; and besotted us to the gay imitation of a lordly Imprimatur, one from Lambeth house, another from the West end of Pauls; so apishly Romanizing that the word of command still was set downe in Latine; as if the learned Grammaticall pen that wrote it, would cast no ink without Latine; or perhaps, as they thought, because no vulgar tongue was worthy to expresse the pure conceit of an Imprimatur; but rather, as I hope, for that our English, the language of men ever famous and formost in the achievements of liberty, will not easily finde servile letters anow to spell such a dictatorie presumption English. And thus ye have the Inventors and the originall of Book-licencing ript up, and drawn as lineally as any pedigree. We have it not, that can be heard of, from any ancient State, or politie, or Church, nor by any Statute left us by our Ancestors, elder or later; nor from the moderne custom of any reformed City, or Church abroad; but from the most Antichristian Councel, and the most tyrannous Inquisition that ever inquir'd. Till then Books were ever as freely admitted into the World as any other birth; the issue of the brain was no more stifl'd then the issue of the womb; no envious Juno sate cros-leg'd over the nativity of any mans intellectual off-spring; but if it prov'd a Monster, who denies but that it was justly burnt, or sunk into the Sea. But that a Book, in wors condition then a peccant soul, should be to
stand before a Jury ere it be borne to the World, and undergo yet in darknesse the judgement of Radamanth and his Colleagues, ere it can passe the ferry backward into light, was never heard before, till that mysterious iniquity, provokt and troubl'd at the first entrance of Reformation, sought out new limbo's and new hells wherein they might include our Books also within the number of their damned. And this was the rare morsell so officiously snatcht up and so ilfavourdly imitated by our inquisiturient Bishops and the attendant minorites their Chaplains. That ye like not now these most certain Authors of this licencing order, and that all sinister intention was farre distant from your thoughts, when ye were importun'd the passing it, all men who know the integrity of your actions, and how ye honour Truth, will clear yee readily.

But some will say, what though the Inventors were bad, the thing for all that may be good? It may so; yet if that thing be no such deep invention, but obvious, and easie for any man to light on, and yet best and wisest Commonwealths through all ages and occasions have forborne to use it, and falsest seducers and oppressors of men were the first who tooke it up, and to no other purpose but to obstruct and hinder the first approach of Reformation, I am of those who beleeve it will be a harder alchymy then Lullius ever knew, to sublimat any good use out of such an invention. Yet this only is what I request to gain from this reason, that it may be held a dangerous and suspicious fruit, as certainly it deserves, for the tree that bore it, untill I can dissect one by one the properties it has. But I have first to finish as was propounded, what is to be thought in generall of reading Books, what ever sort
they be, and whether be more the benefit or the harm that thence proceeds?

Not to insist upon the examples of Moses, Daniel and Paul, who were skilfull in all the learning of the Egyptians, Caldeans, and Greeks, which could not probably be without reading their Books of all sorts, in Paul especially, who thought it no defilement to insert into holy Scripture the sentences of three Greek Poets and one of them a Tragedian, the question was notwithstanding sometimes controverted among the Primitive Doctors, but with great odds on that side which affirm’d it both lawfull and profitable, as was then evidently perceiv’d, when Julian the Apostat and suttlest enemy to our faith made a decree forbidding Christians the study of heathen learning; for, said he, they wounded us with our own weapons, and with our owne arts and sciences they overcome us. And indeed the Christians were put so to their shifts by this crafty means, and so much in danger to decline into all ignorance, that the two Apollinarii were fain as a man may say to coin all the seven liberall Sciences out of the Bible, reducing it into divers forms of Orations, Poems, Dialogues, ev’n to the calculating of a new Christian Grammar. But saith the Historian Socrates:

The providence of God provided better then the industry of Apollinaris and his son by taking away that illiterat law with the life of him who devis’d it. So great an injury they then held it to be depriv’d of Hellenick learning; and thought it a persecution more undermining and secretly decaying the Church then the open cruelty of Decius or Dioclesian. And perhaps it was the same politick drift that the Divell whipt St. Jerom in a lenten dream, for reading Cicero; or else it was a
fantasm bred by the feaver which had then seis’d him. For had an Angel bin his discipliner, unlesse it were for dwelling too much upon Ciceronianisms, and had chastiz’d the reading, not the vanity, it had bin plainly partiall, first, to correct him for grave Cicero, and not for scurrill Plautus whom he confesses to have bin reading not long before, next, to correct him only, and let so many more ancient Fathers wax old in those pleasant and florid studies without the lash of such a tutoring apparition; insomuch that Basil teaches how some good use may be made ofMargin: a sportfull Poem, not now extant, writ by Homer; and why not then ofMorgante an Italian Romanze much to the same purpose? But if it be agreed we shall be try’d by visions, there is a vision recorded by Eusebius far ancierter then this tale ofJerom to the nun Eustochium, and besides has nothing of a feavor in it. Dionysius Alexandrinus was about the year 240 a person of great name in the Church for piety and learning, who had wont to avail himself much against hereticks by being conversant in their Books; untill a certain Presbyter laid it scrupulously to his conscience, how he durst venture himselfe among those defiling volumes. The worthy man loath to give offence fell into a new debate with himselfe what was to be thought; when suddenly a vision sent from God, it is his own Epistle that so avers it, confirm’d him in these words: Read any books what ever come to thy hands, for thou art sufficient both to judge aright and to examine each matter. To this revelation he assented the sooner, as he confesses, because it was answerable to that of the Apostle to the Thessalonians: Prove all things, hold fast that which is good. And he might have added
another remarkable saying of the same Author: To the
pure all things are pure, not only meats and drinks, but
all kinde of knowledge whether of good or evill; the
knowledge cannot defile, nor consequently the books,
if the will and conscience be not desil’d. For books
are as meats and viands are, some of good, some of
evill substance; and yet God in that unapocryphall
vision said without exception, Rise Peter, kill and eat,
leaving the choice to each mans discretion. Whole-
some meats to a vitiated stomack differ little or nothing
from unwholesome; and best books to a naughty mind
are not unappliable to occasions of evill. Bad meats
will scarce breed good nourishment in the healthiest
concoction; but herein the difference is of bad books,
that they to a discreet and judicious Reader serve in
many respects to discover, to confute, to forewarn, and
to illustrate. Wherof what better witnes can ye expect
I should produce then one of your own now sitting
in Parliament, the chief of learned men reputed in
this Land, Mr. Selden, whose volume of naturall and
national laws proves, not only by great authorities
brought together, but by exquisite reasons and theorems
almost mathematically demonstrative, that all opinions,
yea, errors, known, read, and collated, are of main ser-
vice and assistance toward the speedy attainment of
what is truest. I conceive therefore, that when God
did enlarge the universall diet of mans body, saving
ever the rules of temperance, he then also, as before,
left arbitrary the dyeting and repasting of our minds;
wherein every mature man might have to exercise his
owne leading capacity. How great a vertue is tem-
perance, how much of moment through the whole life
of man! yet God committs the managing so great a
trust, without particular Law or prescription, wholly to
the demeanour of every grown man. And therefore
when he himself tabl’d the Jews from heaven, that
Omer which was every mans daily portion of Manna is
computed to have bin more then might have well suffic’d
the heartiest feeder thrice as many meals. For those
actions, which enter into a man rather then issue out
of him and therefore defile not, God uses not to cap-
tivat under a perpetuall childhood of prescription, but
trusts him with the gift of reason to be his own chooser;
there were but little work left for preaching, if law and
compulsion show¹ grow so fast upon those things which
hertofore were govern’d only by exhortation. Salomon
informs us that much reading is a wearines to the flesh;
but neither he nor other inspir’d author tells us that
such or such reading is unlawfull: yet certainly had
God thought good to limit us herein, it had bin much
more expedient to have told us what was unlawfull
then what was wearisome. As for the burning of those
Ephesian books by St. Pauls converts, tis reply’d the
books were magick, the Syriack so renders them. It
was a privat act, a voluntary act, and leaves us to
a voluntary imitation; the men in remorse burnt those
books which were their own; the Magistrat by this ex-
ample is not appointed; these men practiz’d the books,
another might perhaps have read them in some sort use-
full. Good and evill we know in the field of this World
grow up together almost inseparably; and the knowledge
of good is so involv’d and interwoven with the know-
ledge of evill and in so many cunning resemblances
hardly to be discern’d, that those confused seeds, which
were impos’d on Psyche as an incessant labour to cull

¹ Read ‘should.’
out and sort asunder, were not more intermixt. It was from out the rinde of one apple tasted that the knowledge of good and evill as two twins cleaving together leapt forth into the World. And perhaps this is that doom which Adam fell into of knowing good and evill, that is to say of knowing good by evill. As therefore the state of man now is, what wisdome can there be to choose, what continence to forbeare without the knowledge of evill? He that can apprehend and consider vice with all her baits and seeming pleasures, and yet abstain, and yet distinguish, and yet prefer that which is truly better, he is the true wayfaring Christian. I cannot praise a fugitive and cloister’d vertue, unexercis’d and unbreath’d, that never sallies out and sees her adversary, but slinks out of the race, where that immortall garland is to be run for not without dust and heat. Assuredly we bring not innocence into the world, we bring impurity much rather: that which purifies us is triall, and triall is by what is contrary. That vertue therefore which is but a youngling in the contemplation of evill, and knows not the utmost that vice promises to her followers, and rejects it, is but a blank vertue, not a pure; her whitenesse is but an excrementall whitenesse; Which was the reason why our sage and serious Poet Spencer, whom I dare be known to think a better teacher then Scotus or Aquinas, describing true temperance under the person of Guion, brings him in with his palmer through the cave of Mammon and the bowr of earthly blisse, that he might see and know, and yet abstain. Since therefore the knowledge and suruy of vice is in this world so necessary to the constituting of human vertue, and

1 Read ‘warfaring’? See note.
the scanning of error to the confirmation of truth, how
can we more safely and with lesse danger scout into
the regions of sin and falsity then by reading all man-
ner of tractats, and hearing all manner of reason? And

5 this is the benefit which may be had of books promis-
cuously read. But of the harm that may result hence
three kinds are usually reckn’d: First, is fear’d the
infection that may spread; but then all human learning
and controversie in religious points must remove out

10 of the world, yea, the Bible it selfe; for that oftimes
relates blasphemy not nicely, it describes the carnall
sense of wicked men not unelegantly, it brings in
holiest men passionately murmuring against providence
through all the arguments of Epicurus: in other great

15 disputes it answers dubiously and darkly to the com-
mon reader: And ask a Talmudest what ails the
modesty of his marginall Keri, that Moses and all the
Prophets cannot perswade him to pronounce the tex-
tual Chetiv. For these causes we all know the Bible

20 it selfe put by the Papist into the first rank of prohi-
bited books. The ancientest Fathers must be next remov’d, as Clement of Alexandria, and that Eusebian
book of Evangelick preparation, transmitting our ears
through a hoard of heathenish obscenities to receive

25 the Gospel. Who finds not that Irenaeus, Epiphanius,
Jerom, and others discover more heresies then they
well confute, and that oft for heresie which is the truer
opinion? Nor boots it to say for these, and all the
heathen Writers of greatest infection, if it must be

30 thought so, with whom is bound up the life of human
learning, that they writ in an unknown tongue, so long
as we are sure those languages are known as well to
the worst of men, who are both most able and most
diligent to instill the poison they suck, first into the Courts of Princes, acquainting them with the choicest delights and criticisms of sin. As perhaps did that Petronius whom Nero call'd his Arbiter, the Master of his revels; and that notorious ribald of Arezzo, dreaded, and yet dear to the Italian Courtiers. I name not him for posterities sake, whom Harry the 8. nam'd in merri-ment his Vicar of hell. By which compendious way all the contagion that foreine books can infuse will finde a passage to the people farre easier and shorter then an Indian voyage, though it could be sail'd either by the North of Calato Eastward or of Canada Westward, while our Spanish licencing gags the English presse never so severely. But on the other side, that infection which is from books of controversie in Religion, is more doubtfull and dangerous to the learned then to the ignorant; and yet those books must be permitted untoucht by the licencer. It will be hard to instance where any ignorant man hath bin ever seduc't by Papisticall book in English, unlesse it were commended and expounded to him by some of that Clergy; and indeed all such tractats whether false or true are as the Prophesie of Isaiah was to the Eunuch, not to be understood without a guide. But of our Priests and Doctors how many have bin corrupted by studying the comments of Jesuits and Sorbonists, and how fast they could transfuse that corruption into the people, our experience is both late and sad. It is not forgot since the acute and distinct Arminius was per-verted meerly by the perusing of a namelesse discours writ'n at Delf, which at first he took in hand to confute. Seeing therefore that those books, and those in great abundance which are likeliest to taint both life and doctrine, cannot be supprest without the fall of learning
and of all ability in disputation, and that these books of
either sort are most and soonest catching to the learned,
from whom to the common people what ever is hereticall
or dissolute may quickly be convey'd, and that evill
manner are as perfectly learnt without books a thousand
other ways which cannot be stopt, and evill doctrine not
with books can propagate, except a teacher guide, which
he might also doe without writing and so beyond
prohibiting, I am not able to unfold how this cautelous
enterprise of licencing can be exempted from the number
of vain and impossible attempts. And he who were
pleasantly dispos'd could not well avoid to lik'n it to the
exploit of that gallant man who thought to pound up the
crows by shutting his Parkgate. Besides another in-
convenience, if learned men be the first receivers out of
books and dispredders both of vice and error, how shall
the 'licencers themselves be confided in, unlesse we can
conserr upon them, or they assume to themselves above
all others in the Land, the grace of infallibility and un-
corruptednesse? And again if it be true, that a wise
man like a good refiner can gather gold out of the
drossiest volume, and that a fool will be a fool with the
best book, yea, or without book, there is no reason that
we should deprive a wise man of any advantage to his
wisdome, while we seek to restrain from a fool that
which being restrain'd will be no hindrance to his folly.
For if there should be so much exactnesse always us'd to
keep that from him which is unfit for his reading, we
should in the judgement of Aristotle not only but of
Salomon and of our Saviour, not voutsafe him good
precepts, and by consequence not willingly admit him to
good books, as being certain that a wise man will make
better use of an idle pamphlet then a fool will do of
sacred Scripture. 'Tis next alleg'd we must not expos
our selves to temptations without necessity, and next to
that, not imploy our time in vain things. To both these
objections one answer will serve, out of the grounds
already laid, that to all men such books are not tem-
ptations, nor vanities; but useful drugs and materials
wherewith to temper and compose effective and strong
med'cins, which mans life cannot want. The rest, as
children and childish men, who have not the art to
qualifie and prepare these working minerals, well may be
exhorted to forbear, but hinder'd forcibly they cannot be
by all the licencing that Sainted Inquisition could ever
yet contrive; which is what I promis'd to deliver next:
That this order of licencing conduce nothing to the end
for which it was fram'd; and hath almost prevented me
by being clear already while thus much hath bin ex-
plaining. See the ingenuity of Truth, who when she gets
a free and willing hand, opens her self faster then the
pace of method and discours can overtake her. It was
the task which I began with, To shew that no Nation, or
well instituted State, if they valu'd books at all, did ever
use this way of licencing; and it might be answer'd, that
this is a piece of prudence lately discover'd; To which I
return, that as it was a thing slight and obvious to think
on, so if it had bin difficult to finde out, there wanted not
among them long since who suggested such a cours;
which they not following, leave us a pattern of their
judgement, that it was not the not knowing, but the not
approving, which was the cause of their not using it.
Plato, a man of high authority indeed, but least of all for
his Commonwealth, in the book of his laws, which no
City ever yet receiv'd, fed his fancie with making many
edicts to his ayrie Burgomasters, which they who other-
wise admire him wish had bin rather buried and excus'd in the genial cups of an Academick night-sitting. By which laws he seems to tolerat no kind of learning, but by unalterable decree, consisting most of practicall traditions, to the attainment whereof a Library of smaller bulk then his own dialogues would be abundant. And there also enacts that no Poet should so much as read to any privat man what he had writ'tn, untill the Judges and Law-keepers had seen it and allow'd it; But that Plato meant this Law peculiarly to that Commonwealth which he had imagin'd, and to no other, is evident. Why was he not else a Law-giver to himself, but a transgressor, and to be expell'd by his own Magistrats, both for the wanton epigrams and dialogues which he made, and his perpetuall reading of Sophron Mimus and Aristophanes, books of grossest infamy, and also for commending the latter of them, though he were the malicious libeller of his chief friends, to be read by the Tyrant Dionysius, who had little need of such trash to spend his time on? But that he knew this licencing of Poems had reference and dependence to many other proviso's there set down in his fancied republic, which in this world could have no place; and so neither he himself, nor any Magistrat, or City ever imitated that cours, which tak'n apart from those other collaterall injunctions must needs be vain and fruitless. For if they fell upon one kind of strictnesse, unlesse their care were equall to regulat all other things of like aptnes to corrupt the mind, that single endeav'our they knew would be but a fond labour: to shut and fortifie one gate against corruption, and be necessitated to leave others round about wide open. If we think to regulat Printing, thereby to rectifie manners,
we must regulat all recreations and pastimes, all that is
delightfull to man. No musick must be heard, no song
be set or sung, but what is grave and Dorick. There
must be licencing dancers, that no gesture, motion, or
deporation be taught our youth but what by their al-
lowance shall be thought honest; for such Plato was
provided of. It will ask more then the work of twenty
licencers to examin all the lutes, the violins, and the
ghitarrs in every house; they must not be suffer'd to
prattle as they doe, but must be licenc'd what they may
say. And who shall silence all the airs and madrigalls,
that whisper softnes in chambers? The Windows also,
and the Balcones must be thought on; there are shrewd
books with dangerous Frontispices set to sale; who
shall prohibit them? shall twenty licencers? The vil-
lages also must have their visitors to enquire what lec-
tures the bagpipe and the rebbeck reads, ev'n to the
ballatry and the gammuth of every municipal fidler,
for these are the Countrymans Arcadia's and his Monte
Mayors. Next, what more Nationall corruption, for
which England hears ill abroad, then houshold gluttony?
who shall be the rectors of our daily rioting? and what
shall be done to inhibit the multitudes that frequent
those houses where drunk'nes is sold and harbour'd?
Our garments also should be referr'd to the licencing
of some more sober work-masters to see them cut into a
lesse wanton garb. Who shall regulat all the mixt con-
versation of our youth, male and female together, as is
the fashion of this Country? who shall still appoint what
shall be discours'd, what presum'd, and no furder?
Lastly, who shall forbid and separat all idle resort, all
evill company? These things will be, and must be;
but how they shall be lest hurtfull, how lest enticing,
herein consists the grave and governing wisdom of a State. To sequester out of the world into Atlantick and Eutopian polities, which never can be drawn into use, will not mend our condition; but to ordain wisely as in this world of evill, in the midd'st whereof God hath plac't us unavoidably. Nor is it Plato's licencing of books will doe this, which necessarily pulls along with it so many other kinds of licencing, as will make us all both ridiculous and weary, and yet frustrat; but those unwrit't'n, or at least unconstraining laws of vertuous education, religious and civill nurture, which Plato there mentions as the bonds and ligaments of the Commonwealth, the pillars and the sustainer of every writ'tn Statute; these they be which will bear chief sway in such matters as these, when all licencing will be easily eluded. Impunity and remissesnes, for certain, are the bane of a Commonwealth; but here the great art lyes to discern in what the law is to bid restraint and punishment, and in what things perswasion only is to work. If every action which is good, or evill in man at ripe years, were to be under pittance and prescription and compulsion, what were vertue but a name, what praise could be then due to well-doing, what grammerry to be sober, just, or continent? Many there be that complain of divin Providence for suffering Adam to transgresse. Foolish tongues! when God gave him reason, he gave him freedom to choose, for reason is but choosing; he had bin else a meer artificiall Adam, such an Adam as he is in the motions. We our selves esteem not of that obedience or love or gift, which is of force: God therefore left him free, set before him a provoking object, ever almost in his eyes; herein consisted his merit, herein the right of his reward, the praise of his abstinence. Where-
therefore did he creat passions within us, pleasures round about us, but that these rightly temper'd are the very ingredients of vertu? They are not skilfull considerers of human things, who imagin to remove sin by removing the matter of sin; for, besides that it is a huge heap increasing under the very act of diminishing though some part of it may for a time be withdrawn from some persons, it cannot from all in such a universall thing as books are; and when this is done, yet the sin remains entire. Though ye take from a covetous man all his treasure, he has yet one jewell left: ye cannot bereave him of his covetousnesse. Banish all objects of lust, shut up all youth into the severest discipline that can be exercis'd in any hermitage, ye cannot make them chaste that came not thither so; such great care and wisdom is requir'd to the right managing of this point. Suppose we could expell sin by this means; look how much we thus expell of sin, so much we expell of vertue: for the matter of them both is the same; remove that, and ye remove them both alike. This justifies the high providence of God, who though he command us temperance, justice, continence, yet pouwr out before us ev'n to a profusenes all desirable things, and gives us minds that can wander beyond all limit and satiety.

Why should we then affect a rigor contrary to the manner of God and of nature, by abridging or scanting those means, which books freely permitted are, both to the triall of vertue and the exercise of truth? It would be better done to learn that the law must needs be frivolous which goes to restrain things uncertainly and yet equally working to good and to evill. And were I the chooser, a dram of well-doing should be pre-
ferri'd before many times as much the forcible hindrance
of evill-doing. For God sure esteems the growth and compleating of one vertuous person more then the restraint of ten vitiuous. And albeit what ever thing we hear or see, sitting, walking, travelling, or conversing may be fitly call'd our book, and is of the same effect that writings are, yet grant the thing to be prohibited were only books, it appears that this order hitherto is far insufficient to the end which it intends. Do we not see, not once or oftner, but weekly that continu'd Court-libell against the Parlament and City, Printed, as the wet sheets can witnes, and dispers't among us for all that licencing can doe? yet this is the prime service a man would think, wherein this order should give proof of it self. If it were executed, you'l say. But certain, if execution be remisse or blindfold now and in this particular, what will it be hereafter and in other books? If then the order shall not be vain and frustrat, behold a new labour, Lords and Commons: ye must repeal and proscribe all scandalous and unlicenc't books already printed and divulg'd; after ye have drawn them up into a list, that all may know which are condemn'd and which not; and ordain that no forrein books be deli-ver'd out of custody, till they have bin read over. This office will require the whole time of not a few overseers, and those no vulgar men. There be also books which are partly usefull and excellent, partly culpable and pernicious; this work will ask as many more officials to make expurgations and expunctions, that the Commonwealth of learning be not damnify'd. In fine, when the multitude of books encrease upon their hands, ye must be fain to catalogue all those Printers who are found frequently offending, and forbidd the importation of their whole suspected hypography. In a word, that
this your order may be exact, and not deficient, ye must reform it perfectly according to the model of Trent and Sevil, which I know ye abhorre to doe. Yet though ye should condiscend to this, which God forbid, the order still would be but fruitlesse and defective to that end whereto ye meant it. If to prevent sects and schisms, who is so unread or so uncatechis'd in story, that hath not heard of many sects refusing books as a hindrance, and preserving their doctrine unmixt for many ages only by unwrit'n traditions. The Christian faith, for that was once a schism, is not unknown to have spread all over Asia, ere any Gospel or Epistle was seen in writing. If the amendment of manners be aym'd at, look into Italy and Spain, whether those places be one scruple the better, the honester, the wiser, the chaster, since all the inquisitionall rigor that hath bin executed upon books.

Another reason, whereby to make it plain that this order will misse the end it seeks, consider by the quality which ought to be in every licencer. It cannot be deny'd but that he who is made judge to sit upon the birth or death of books, whether they may be wafted into this world or not, had need to be a man above the common measure both studious, learned, and judicious; there may be else no mean mistakes in the censure of what is passable or not; which is also no mean injury. If he be of such worth as behoovs him, there cannot be a more tedious and unpleasing journey-work, a greater losse of time levied upon his head, then to be made the perpetuall reader of unchosen books and pamphlets, oftimes huge volumes. There is no book that is accept-able unlesse at certain seasons; but to be enjoyn'd the reading of that at all times, and in a hand scars legible,
whereof three pages would not down at any time in the fairest Print, is an imposition which I cannot beleevve how he that values time and his own studies, or is but of a sensible nostrill, should be able to endure. In this one thing I crave leave of the present licencers to be pardon’d for so thinking; who doublesse\(^1\) took this office up looking on it through their obedience to the Parliament, whose command perhaps made all things seem easie and unlaborious to them; but that this short triall hath wearied them out already, their own expressions and excuses to them who make so many journeys to sollicit their licence, are testimony anough. Seeing therefore those who now possesse the imploymet, by all evident signs wish themselves well ridd of it, and that no man of worth, none that is not a plain unthrift of his own hours is ever likely to succeed them, except he mean to put himself to the salary of a Presse-corrector, we may easily foresee what kind of licencers we are to expect hereafter, either ignorant, imperious, and remisse, or basely pecuniary. This is what I had to shew wherein this order cannot conduce to that end, whereof it bears the intention.

I lastly proceed from the no good it can do, to the manifest hurt it causes, in being first the greatest discouragement and affront that can be offer’d to learning and to learned men. It was the complaint and lamentation of Prelats upon every least breath of a motion to remove pluralities and distribute more equally Church revennu’s, that then all learning would be for ever dasht and dis-courag’d. But as for that opinion, I never found cause to think that the tenth part of learning stood or fell with the Clergy; nor could I ever but hold it for a sordid and

\(^{1}\) Read 'doublesse.'
unworthy speech of any Churchman who had a competency left him. If therefore ye be loath to dishearten utterly and discontent, not the mercenary crew of false pretenders to learning; but the free and ingenuous sort of such as evidently were born to study and love learning for its self, not for lucre or any other end but the service of God and of truth, and perhaps that lasting fame and perpetuity of praise which God and good men have consented shall be the reward of those whose publish labour of the good of mankind, then know, that so far to distrust the judgement and the honesty of one who hath but a common repute in learning and never yet offended, as not to count him fit to print his mind without a tutor and examiner, lest he should drop a scism or something of corruption, is the greatest displeasure and indignity to a free and knowing spirit that can be put upon him. What advantage is it to be a man over it is to be a boy at school, if we have only scapt the ferular to come under the fescu of an Imprimatur? if serious and elaborat writings, as if they were no more then the them of a Grammar lad under his Pedagogue must not be utter’d without the cursory eyes of a temporizing and extemporizing licencer? He who is not trusted with his own actions, his drift not being known to be evil, and standing to the hazard of law and penalty, has no great argument to think himself reputed in the Commonwealth wherein he was born for other then a fool or a foreiner. When a man writes to the world, he summons up all his reason and deliberation to assist him; he searches, meditates, is industrious, and likely consults and confers with his judicious friends; after all which done he takes himself to be inform’d in what he writes as well as any that writ before him; if in this
the most consummat act of his fidelity and ripenesse, no
years, no industry, no former proof of his abilities can
bring him to that state of maturity as not to be still
mistrusted and suspected, unlesse he carry all his con-
siderat diligence, all his midnight watchings, and ex-
pence of Palladian oyl, to the hasty view of an unleasur'd
licencer, perhaps much his younger, perhaps far his in-
feriour in judgement, perhaps one who never knew the
labour of book-writing, and if he be not repulst or
slipt, must appear in Print like a punie with his
 guardian and his censors hand on the back of his title
to be his bayl and surety, that he is no idiot or seducer,
it cannot be but a dishonor and derogation to the author,
to the book, to the priviledge and dignity of Learning.
And what if the author shall be one so copious of fancie
as to have many things well worth the adding come
into his mind after licencing, while the book is yet under
the Presse, which not seldom happ'ns to the best and
diligentest writers; and that perhaps a dozen times in
one book? The Printer dares not go beyond his licenc't
copy; so often then must the author trudge to his leav-
giver, that those his new insertions may be viewd; and
many a jaunt will be made, ere that licencer, for it must
be the same man, can either be found, or found at
leisure; mean while either the Presse must stand still,
which is no small damage, or the author loose his accuratest thoughts and send the book forth wors then
he had made it, which to a diligent writer is the greatest
melancholy and vexation that can befall. And how can a
man teach with autority, which is the life of teaching,
how can he be a Doctor in his book as he ought to be,
or else had better be silent, whenas all he teaches, all he
delivers, is but under the tuition, under the correction
of his patriarchal licencer to blot or alter what precisely accords not with the hidebound humor which he calls his judgement; when every acute reader upon the first sight of a pedantick licence, will be ready with these like words to ding the book a coits distance from him: I hate a pupil teacher, I endure not an instructer that comes to me under the wardship of an overseeing fist; I know nothing of the licencer, but that I have his own hand here for his arrogance; who shall warrant me his judgement? The State Sir, replies the Stationer; but has a quick return, The State shall be my governours, but not my criticks; they may be mistak'n in the choice of a licencer as easily as this licencer may be mistak'n in an author: This is some common stuffe; and he might adde from Sir Francis Bacon, That such authoris'd books are but the language of the times. For though a licencer should happ'n to be judicious more then ordnary, which will be a great jeopardy of the next succession, yet his very office and his commission enjoyns him to let passe nothing but what is vulgarly receiv'd already. Nay, which is more lamentable, if the work of any deceased author, though never so famous in his life time and even to this day, come to their hands for licence to be Printed or Reprinted, if there be found in his book one sentence of a ventrous edge, utter'd in the height of zeal, and who knows whether it might not be the dictat of a divine Spirit, yet not suiting with every low decrepit humor of their own, though it were Knox himself the Reformer of a Kingdom that spake it, they will not pardon him their dash; the sense of that great man shall to all posterity be lost for the fearfulness or the presumptuous rashnesse of a perfunctory licencer. And to what an author this violence hath bin lately done, and in what
book of greatest consequence to be faithfully publish'd, I could now instance, but shall forbear till a more convenient season. Yet if these things be not resented seriously and timely by them who have the remedy in their power, but that such iron moulds as these shall have authority to know out the choicest periods of exquisitest books, and to commit such a treacherous fraud against the orphan remainders of worthiest men after death, the more sorrow will belong to that hapless race of men, whose misfortune it is to have understanding. Henceforth let no man care to learn, or care to be more then worldly wise; for certainly in higher matters to be ignorant and slothful, to be a common stedfast dunce will be the only pleasant life and only in request.

And as it is a particular disesteem of every knowing person alive, and most injurious to the writ'n labours and monuments of the dead, so to me it seems an undervaluing and vilifying of the whole Nation. I cannot set so light by all the invention, the art, the wit, the grave and solid judgement which is in England, as that it can be comprehended in any twenty capacities how good soever; much lesse that it should not passe except their superintendence be over it, except it be sifted and strain'd with their strainers, that it should be uncurrent without their manuall stamp. Truth and understanding are not such wares as to be monopoliz'd and traded in by tickets and statutes and standards. We must not think to make a staple commodity of all the knowledge in the Land, to mark and licence it like our broad cloath and our wooll packs. What is it but a servitude like that impos'd by the Philistims, not to be allow'd the sharpening of our own axes and coulters, but we must repair from all quarters to twenty licencing
forges. Had any one writ'n and divulg'd erroneous things and scandalous to honest life, misusing and forfeiting the esteem had of his reason among men, if after conviction this only censure were adjudg'd him, that he should never henceforth write but what were first examin'd by an appointed officer, whose hand should be annexed to passe his credit for him that now he might be safely read, it could not be apprehended lesse then a disgracefull punishment. Whence to include the whole Nation, and those that never yet thus offended, under such a diffident and suspectfull prohibition, may plainly be understood what a disparagement it is. So much the more, when as dettors and delinquents may walk abroad without a keeper, but unoffensive books must not stirre forth without a visible jaylor in thir title. Nor is it to the common people lesse then a reproach; for if we so jealous over them as that we dare not trust them with an English pamphlet, what doe we but censure them for a giddy, vitious, and ungrounded people, in such a sick and weak estate of faith and discretion, as to be able to take nothing down but through the pipe of a licencer? That this is care or love of them, we cannot pretend, whenas in those Popish places where the Laity are most hated and despis'd the same strictnes is us'd over them. Wisdom we cannot call it, because it stops but one breach of licence, nor that neither; whenas those corruptions which it seeks to prevent, break in faster at other dores which cannot be shut.

And in conclusion it reflects to the disrepute of our Ministers also, of whose labours we should hope better, and of the proficiencie which thir flock reaps by them: then that after all this light of the Gospel which is, and is to be, and all this continuall preaching, they should
be still frequented with such an unprincipl'd, unedi-
fy'd, and laick rabble, as that the whiffe of every new
pamphlet should stagger them out of thir catechism
and Christian walking. This may have much reason
to discourage the Ministers when such a low conceit is
had of all their exhortations and the benefiting of their
hearers, as that they are not thought fit to be turn'd
loose to three sheets of paper without a licencer; that
all the Sermons, all the Lectures preacht, printed, vented
in such numbers and such volumes as have now well-
nigh made all other books unsalable, should not be armor
anough against one single enchiridion, without the castle
St. Angelo of an Imprimatur.

And lest som should persuade ye, Lords and Com-
mons, that these arguments of lerned mens discouragement
at this your order, are meer flourishes and not
reall, I could recount what I have seen and heard in
other Countries, where this kind of inquisition tyrann-
nizes; when I have sat among their lerned men, for
that honor I had, and bin counted happy to be born
in such a place of Philosophic freedom as they suppos'd
England was, while themselvs did nothing but bemoan
the servil condition into which lerning amongst them
was brought; that this was it which had dampt the
glory of Italian wits, that nothing had bin there writ'n
now these many years but flattery and fustian. There
it was that I found and visited the famous Galileo
grown old, a prisner to the Inquisition, for thinking
in Astronomy otherwise then the Franciscan and Do-
minican licencers thought. And though I knew that
England then was groaning loudest under the Prelati-
call yoak, nevertheless I tooke it as a pledge of future
happines, that other Nations were so perswaded of her
liberty. Yet was it beyond my hope that those Worthies were then breathing in her air, who should be her leaders to such a deliverance as shall never be forgott’n by any revolution of time that this world hath to finish.

When that was once begun, it was as little in my fear, that what words of complaint I heard among lerned men of other parts utter’d against the Inquisition, the same I should hear by as lerned men at home utter’d in time of Parliament against an order of licencing; and that so generally, that when I disclos’d my self a companion of their discontent, I might say, if without envy, that he whom an honest quaestorship had in dear’d to the Sicilians, was not more by them importun’d against Verres then the favourable opinion which I had among many who honour ye and are known and respected by ye, loaded me with entreaties and persuasions, that I would not despair to lay together that which just reason should bring into my mind toward the removal of an undeserved thraldom upon lerning.

That this is not therefore the disburdning of a particular fancie, but the common grievance of all those who had prepar’d their minds and studies above the vulgar pitch to advance truth in others and from others to entertain it, thus much may satisfy. And in their name I shall for neither friend nor foe conceal what the generall murmur is; that if it come to inquisitioning again and licencing, and that we are so timorous of our selvs, and so suspicious of all men, as to fear each book, and the shaking of every leaf, before we know what the contents are, if some who but of late were little better then silenc’t from preaching, shall come now to silence us from reading except what they please, it cannot be guest what is intended by som but a second
tyranny over learning; and will soon put it out of controversy that Bishops and Presbyters are the same to us both name and thing. That those evils of Prelaty which before from five or six and twenty Sees were distributively charg’d upon the whole people, will now light wholly upon learning, is not obscure to us: whenas now the Pastor of a small unlearned Parish on the sudden shall be exalted Archbishop over a large dioces of books, and yet not remove, but keep his other cure too, a mysticall pluralist. He who but of late cry’d down the sole ordination of every novice Batchelor of Art, and deny’d sole jurisdiction over the simplest Parishioner, shall now at home in his privat chair assume both these over worthiest and excellentest books and ablest authors that write them. This is not, Yee Covenants and Protestations that we have made, this is not to put down Prelaty; this is but to chop an Episcopacy; this is but to translate the Palace Metropolitan from one kind of dominion into another; this is but an old cannonical slight of commutating our penance. To startle thus betimes at a meer unlicenc’t pamphlet will after a while be afraid of every conventicle, and a while after will make a conventicle of every Christian meeting. But I am certain that a State govern’d by the rules of justice and fortitude, or a Church built and founded upon the rock of faith and true knowledge, cannot be so pusillanimous. While things are yet not constituted in Religion, that freedom of writing should be restrain’d by a discipline imitated from the Prelats and learnt by them from the Inquisition, to shut us up all again into the brest of a licencier, must needs give cause of doubt and discouragement to all learned and religious men. Who cannot but discern
the finenes of this politic drift, and who are the contrivers: that while Bishops were to be baited down, then all Presses might be open; it was the people's birthright and priviledge in time of Parlament, it was the breaking forth of light? But now the Bishops abrogated and voided out of the Church, as if our Reformation sought no more but to make room for others into their seats under another name, the Episcopall arts begin to bud again, the cruse of truth must run no more oyle, liberty of Printing must be enthrall'd again under a Prelaticall commission of twenty, the privilege of the people nullify'd, and which is wors, the freedom of learning must groan again and to her old fetters, all this the Parlament yet sitting. Although their own late arguments and defences against the Prelats might remember them that this obstructing violence meets for the most part with an event utterly opposite to the end which it drives at: instead of suppressing sects and schisms, it raises them and invests them with a reputation. The punishing of wits enhances their authority, saith the Vicount St. Albans, and a forbidd'n writing is thought to be a certain spark of truth that flies up in the faces of them who seek to tread it out. This order therefore may prove a nursing mother to sects, but I shall easily shew how it will be a step-dame to Truth: and first by disinabling us to the maintenance of what is known already:

Well knows he who uses to consider, that our faith and knowledge thrives by exercise as well as our limbs and complexion. Truth is compar'd in Scripture to a streaming fountain; if her waters flow not in a perpetuall progression, they sick'n into a muddy pool of conformity and tradition. A man may be a heretick in the truth; and if he beleeve things only because his
Pastor sayes so, or the Assembly so determins, without knowing other reason, though his belief be true, yet the very truth he holds becomes his heresie. There is not any burden that som would gladier post off to another then the charge and care of their Religion. There be, who knows not that there be, of Protestants and professors who live and dye in as arrant an implicit faith as any lay Papist of Loretto. A wealthy man addicted to his pleasure and to his profits finds Religion to be a traffick so entangl'd and of so many piddling accounts, that of all mysteries he cannot skill to keep a stock going upon that trade. What shoulde he doe? Fain he would have the name to be religious, fain he would bear up with his neighbours in that. What does he therefore but resolves to give over toyling, and to find himself out som factor, to whose care and credit he may commit the whole managing of his religous affairs, som Divine of note and estimation that must be. To him he adheres, resigns the whole ware-house of his religion with all the locks and keyes into his custody; and indeed makes the very person of that man his religion; esteems his associating with him a sufficient evidence and commendatory of his own piety. So that a man may say his religion is now no more within himself, but is become a dividuall movable, and goes and comes neer him according as that good man frequents the house. He entertains him, gives him gifts, feasts him, lodges him; his religion comes home at night, praiies, is liberally upt, and sumptuously laid to sleep, rises, is saluted, and after the malmsey, or some well spic't bruage, and better breakfasted then he whose morning appetite would have gladly fed on green figs between Bethany and Jerusalem, his Religion walks abroad at eight, and leavs his
kind entertainer in the shop trading all day without his religion.

Another sort there be who when they hear that all things shall be order'd, all things regulated and set'd, nothing writ'n but what passes through the custom-house of certain Publicans that have the tunaging and the poundaging of all free spok'n truth, will strait give themselves up into your hands, mak'em and cut'em out what religion ye please. There be delights, there be recreations and jolly pastimes that will fetch the day about from sun to sun, and rock the tedious year as in a delightfull dream. What need they torture their heads with that which others have tak'n so strictly and so unalterably into their own pourveying? These are the fruits which a dull ease and cessation of our knowledge will bring forth among the people. How goodly, and how to be wisth were such an obedient unanimity as this, what a fine conformity would it stanch us all into? Doubtles a stanch and solid piece of framework as any January could freeze together.

Nor much better will be the consequence ev'n among the Clergy themselfs. It is no new thing never heard of before for a parochiall Minister, who has his reward and is at his Hercules pillars in a warm benefice, to be easily inclinable, if he have nothing else that may rouse up his studies, to finish his circuit in an English concordance and a topic folio, the gatherings and savings of a sober graduatship, a Harmony and a Catena, treading the constant round of certain common doctrinall heads, attended with their uses, motives, marks and means, out of which as out of an alphabet or sol fa by forming and transforming, joyning and disjoyning variously a little book-craft, and two hours meditation might furnish him
unspeakably to the performance of more then a weekly charge of sermoning, not to reck’n up the infinit helps of interlinearies, breviaries, synopses, and other loitering gear. But as for the multitude of Sermons ready printed and pil’d up, on every text that is not difficult, our London trading St. Thomas in his vestry, and adde to boot St. Martin, and St. Hugh, have not within their hallow’d limits more vendible ware of all sorts ready made; so that penury he never need fear of Pulpit provision, having where so plenteously to refresh his magazin. But if his rear and flanks be not impal’d, if his back dore be not secur’d by the rigid licencer, but that a bold book may now and then issue forth, and give the assault to some of his old collections in their trenches, it will concern him then to keep waking, to stand in watch, to set good guards and sentinells about his receiv’d opinions, to walk the round and counter-round with his fellow inspectors, fearing lest any of his flock be seduc’t, who also then would be better instructed, better exercis’d and disciplin’d. And God fend that the fear of this diligence which must then be us’d, doe not make us affect the lazines of a licencing Church.

For if we be sure we are in the right, and doe not hold the truth guiltily, which becomes not, if we our-selves condemn not our own weak and frivolous teaching, and the people for an untaught and irreligious gadding rout, what can be more fair then when a man judicious, learned, and of a conscience, for ought we know, as good as theirs that taught us what we know, shall not privily from house to house, which is more dangerous, but openly by writing publish to the world what his opinion is, what his reasons, and wherefore that which is now thought cannot be sound? Christ
urg'd it as wherewith to justifie himself, that he preacht in publick; yet writing is more publick then preaching, and more easie to refutation, if need be, there being so many whose businesse and profession meerly it is, to be the champions of Truth; which if they neglect, what can be imputed but their sloth, or inabilty?

Thus much we are hinder'd and dis-inur'd by this cours of licencing towards the true knowledge of what we seem to know. For how much it hurts and hinders the licencers themselves in the calling of their Ministry, more then any secular employment, if they will discharge that office as they ought, so that of necessity they must neglect either the one duty or the other, I insist not, because it is a particular, but leave it to their own con-

science, how they will decide it there.

There is yet behind of what I purpos'd to lay open, the incredible losse and detriment that this plot of licencing puts us to. More then if som enemy at sea should stop up all our hav'ns and ports and creeks, it hinders and retards the importation of our richest Marchandize, Truth; nay, it was first establisht and put in practice by Antichristian malice and mystery on set purpose to extinguish, if it were possible, the light of Reformation, and to settle falshood, little differing from that policie wherewith the Turk upholds his Alcoran by the prohibition of Printing. 'Tis not deny'd, but gladly confess, we are to send our thanks and vows to heav'n louder then most of Nations for that great measure of truth which we enjoy, especially in those main points between us and the Pope with his appertinences the Prelats; but he who thinks we are to pitch our tent here, and have attain'd the utmost prospect of reformation, that the mortalle glasse wherein we contemple can shew us, till
we come to beatific vision, that man by this very opinion declares that he is yet farre short of Truth.

Truth indeed came once into the world with her divine Master, and was a perfect shape most glorious to look on; but when he ascended, and his Apostles after him were laid asleep, then strait arose a wicked race of deceivers, who, as that story goes of the Egyptian Typhon with his conspirators how they dealt with the good Osiris, took the virgin Truth, hewd her lovely form into a thousand pieces, and scatter'd them to the four winds. From that time ever since, the sad friends of Truth, such as durst appear, imitating the carefull search that Isis made for the mangl'd body of Osiris, went up and down gathering up limb by limb still as they could find them. We have not yet found them all, Lords and Commons, nor ever shall doe, till her Masters second comming; he shall bring together every joynt and member, and shall mould them into an immortall feature of loveliness and perfection. Suffer not these licencing prohibitions to stand at every place of opportunity forbidding and disturbing them that continue seeking, that continue to do our obsequies to the torn body of our martyr'd Saint. We boast our light; but if we look not wisely on the Sun it self, it smites us into darknes. Who can discern those planets that are oft Combust, and those stars of brightest magnitude that rise and set with the Sun, untill the opposite motion of their orbs bring them to such a place in the firmament, where they may be seen evning or morning? The light which we have gain'd, was giv'n us, not to be ever staring on, but by it to discover onward things more remote from our knowledge. It is not the unfrocking of a Priest, the unmitring of a Bishop, and the
removing him from off the Presbyterian shoulders that will make us a happy Nation; no, if other things as great in the Church and in the rule of life both economicall and politicall be not looke into and reform'd, we have lookt so long upon the blaze that Zuingleius and Calvin hath beacon'd up to us, that we are stark blind. There be who perpetually complain of schisms and sects, and make it such a calamity that any man dissent from their maxims. 'Tis their own pride and ignorance which causes the disturbing, who neither will hear with meekeness nor can convince; yet all must be supprest which is not found in their Syntagma. They are the troublers, they are the dividers of unity, who neglect and permit not others to unite those dissoever'd pieces which are yet wanting to the body of Truth. To be still searching what we know not by what we know, still closing up truth to truth as we find it (for all her body is homogeneal, and proportionall), this is the golden rule in Theology as well as in Arithmetick, and makes up the best harmony in a Church, not the forc't and outward union of cold and neutall and inwardly divided minds.

Lords and Commons of England, consider what Nation it is wherof ye are and wherof ye are the governours: a Nation not slow and dull, but of a quick, ingenious, and piercing spirit, acute to invent, suttle and sinewy to discours, not beneath the reach of any point the highest that human capacity can soar to. Therefore the studies of learning in her deepest Sciences have bin so ancient and so eminent among us, that Writers of good antiquity and abiest judgement have bin persuwaded that ev'n the school of Pythagoras and the Persian wisdom took beginning from the old Philosophy of this Iland. And that wise and civill Roman,
Julius Agricola, who govern'd once here for Caesar, pre-
ferr'd the naturall wits of Britain before the labour'd studies of the French. Nor is it for nothing that the grave and frugal Transilvanian sends out yearly from as farre as the mountainous borders of Russia and beyond the Hercynian wildernes, not their youth, but their stay'd men, to learn our language and our theo-
logic arts. Yet that which is above all this, the favour and the love of heav'n, we have great argument to think in a peculiar manner propitious and propending towards us. Why else was this Nation chos'n before any other, that out of her as out of Sion should be proclaim'd and sounded forth the first tidings and trumpet of Reforma-
tion to all Europ. And had it not bin the obstinat per-
verses of our Prelats against the divine and admirable spirit of Wicklif, to suppress him as a schismatical and innovator, perhaps neither the Bohemian Husse and Jerom, no, nor the name of Luther or of Calvin had bin ever known; the glory of reforming all our neighbours had bin compleatly ours. But now, as our obdurat Clergy have with violence demean'd the matter, we are become hitherto the latest and the backwardest Schollers, of whom God offer'd to have made us the teachers. Now once again by all concurrence of signs and by the generall in-
strict of holy and devout men, as they daily and solemnly expresse their thoughts, God is decreing to begin some new and great period in his Church, ev'n to the reform-
ing of Reformation it self. What does he then but reveal Himself to his servants, and as his manner is, first to his English-men; I say as his manner is, first to us, though we mark not the method of his counsels and are unworthy? Behold now this vast City: a City of refuge, the mansion house of liberty, encompast and
surrounded with his protection; the shop of warre hath not there more anvils and hammers waking, to fashion out the plates and instruments of armed Justice in defence of beleaguer'd Truth, then there be pens and heads there, sitting by their studious lamps, musing, searching, revolving new notions and idea's wherewith to present as with their homage and their fealty the approaching Reformation, others as fast reading, trying all things, assenting to the force of reason and convince-
ment. What could a man require more from a Nation so pliant and so prone to seek after knowledge? What wants there to such a towardy and pregnant soile but wise and faithfull labourers, to make a knowing people, a Nation of Prophets, of Sages, and of Worthies? We reck'n more then five months yet to harvest; there need not be five weeks; had we but eyes to lift up, the fields are white already. Where there is much desire to learn, there of necessity will be much arguing, much writing, many opinions; for opinion in good men is but know-
ledge in the making. Under these fantastic terrors of sect and schism, we wrong the earnest and zealous thirst after knowledge and understanding which God hath stirr'd up in this City. What some lament of, we rather should rejoice at, should rather praise this pious for-
wardnes among men, to reassume the ill deputed care of their Religion into their own hands again. A little generous prudence, a little forbearance of one another, and som grain of charity might win all these diligences to joyn and unite in one generall and brotherly search after Truth, could we but forgoe this Prelaticall tradition of crowding free consciences and Christian liberties into canons and precepts of men. I doubt not, if some great and worthy stranger should come among us, wise
to discern the mould and temper of a people and how
to govern it, observing the high hopes and aims, the
diligent alacrity of our extended thoughts and reason-
ings in the pursuance of truth and freedom, but that he
would cry out as Pirrhus did, admiring the Roman
docility and courage: If such were my Epirots, I would
not despair the greatest design that could be attempted
to make a Church or Kingdom happy. Yet these are
the men cry'd out against for schismaticks and sectaries;
as if, while the Temple of the Lord was building, some
cutting, some squaring the marble, others hewing the
cedars, there should be a sort of irrationall men who could
not consider there must be many schisms and many dis-
sections made in the quarry and in the timber, ere the
house of God can be built. And when every stone is laid
artfully together, it cannot be united into a continuity, it
can but be contiguous in this world; neither can every
peece of the building be of one form; nay, rather the
perfection consists in this: that out of many moderat
varieties and brotherly dissimilitudes that are not
vastly disproportionall arises the goodly and the grace-
full symmetry that commends the whole pile and struc-
ture. Let us therefore be more considerat builders,
more wise in spirituall architecture, when great refor-
mation is expected. For now the time seems come,
wherein Moses the great Prophet may sit in heav'n re-
joycing to see that memorable and glorious wish of his
fulfill'd, when not only our sev'nty Elders but all the
Lords people are become Prophets. No marvell then
though some men, and some good men too perhaps,
but young in goodnesse, as Joshua then was, envy them.
They fret, and out of their own weaknes are in agony,
lest those divisions and subdivisions will undoe us. The
adversarie again applauds, and waits the hour; when they have brancht themselves out, saith he, small anough into parties and partitions, then will be our time. Fool! he sees not the firm root, out of which we all grow though into branches; nor will beware untill hee see our small divided maniples cutting through at every angle of his ill united and unweildy brigade. And that we are to hope better of all these supposed sects and schisms, and that we shall not need that solicitude honest perhaps though over timorous of them that vex in this behalf, but shall laugh in the end at those malicious applauders of our differences, I have these reasons to perswade me:

First, when a City shall be as it were besieg'd and blockt about, her navigable river infested, inrodes and incursions round, defiance and battell oft rumor'd to be marching up ev'n to her walls and suburb trenches, that then the people, or the greater part, more then at other times, wholly tak'n up with the study of highest and most important matters to be reform'd, should be disputing, reasoning, reading, inventing, discoursing, ev'n to a rarity, and admiration, things not before discourt or writ'tn of, argues first a singular good will, contentednesse and confidence in your prudent foresight and safe government, Lords and Com-
mons; and from thence derives it self to a gallant bravery and well grounded contempt of their enemies, as if there were no small number of as great spirits among us, as his was, who when Rome was nigh besieg'd by Hanibal, being in the City, bought that peece of ground at no cheap rate, whereon Hanibal himself encampt his own regiment. Next it is a lively and cherfull presage of our happy successe and victory. For as in a body, when the blood is fresh, the spirits
pure and vigorous not only to vital but to rationall
faculties and those in the acutest and the pertest
operations of wit and suttlety, it argues in what good
plight and constitution the body is, so when the cher-
fulnesse of the people is so sprightly up, as that it has
not only wherewith to guard well its own freedom and
safety but to spare, and to bestow upon the solidest
and sublimest points of controversie and new inven-
tion, it betok'ns us not degenerated, nor drooping to a
fatall decay, but casting off the old and wrincl'd skin
of corruption to outlive these pangs and wax young
again, entring the glorious waies of Truth and pros-
perous vertue destin'd to become great and honourable
in these latter ages. Methinks I see in my mind a
noble and puissant Nation rousing herself like a strong
man after sleep, and shaking her invincible locks.
Methinks I see her as an Eagle muing her mighty
youth, and kindling her undazl'd eyes at the full mid-
day beam, purging and unscaling her long abused
sight at the fountain it self of heav'ny radiance, while
the whole noise of timorous and flocking birds, with
those also that love the twilight, flutter about, amaz'd
at what she means, and in their envious gabble would
prognosticat a year of sects and schisms.

What should ye doe then, should ye suppresse all
this flowry crop of knowledge and new light sprung up
and yet springing daily in this City, should ye set an
Oligarchy of twenty ingrossers over it, to bring a famin
upon our minds again, when we shall know nothing
but what is measur'd to us by their bushel? Beleeve
it, Lords¹ and Commons, they who counsell ye to such
a suppressing doe as good as bid ye suppresse your-

¹ 'Lord,' ed. of 1644.
selves; and I will soon shew how. If it be desir'd to know the immediat cause of all this free writing and free speaking, there cannot be assign'd a truer then your own mild and free and human government; it is the liberty, Lords and Commons, which your own valorous and happy counsels have purchast us, liberty which is the nurse of all great wits; this is that which hath rarify'd and enlightn'd our spirits like the influence of heav'n; this is that which hath enfranchis'd, enlarg'd and lifted up our apprehensions degrees above themselves. Ye cannot make us now lesse capable, lesse knowing, lesse eagerly pursuing of the truth, unless ye first make your selves, that made us so, lesse the lovers, lesse the founders of our true liberty. We can grow ignorant again, brutish, formall, and slavish, as ye found us; but you then must first become that which ye cannot be, oppressive, arbitrary, and tyrannous, as they were from whom ye have free'd us. That our hearts are now more capacious, our thoughts more erected to the search and expectation of greatest and exactest things, is the issue of your owne vertu propagated in us; ye cannot suppresse that unlesse ye reinforce an abrogated and mercilesse law, that fathers may dispatch at will their own children. And who shall then sticke closest to ye, and excite others? Not he who takes up armes for cote and conduct and his four nobles of Danegelt. Although I dispraise not the defence of just immunities, yet love my peace better, if, that were all. Give me the liberty to know, to utter, and to argue freely according to conscience, above all liberties.

What would be best advis'd then, if it be found so hurtfull and so unequall to suppresse opinions for the newnes or the unsutablenes to a customary acceptance,
will not be my task to say; I only shall repeat what I have learnt from one of your own honourable number, a right noble and pious lord, who had he not sacrif'cd his life and fortunes to the Church and Commonwealth, we had not now mist and bewayl'd a worthy and undoubted patron of this argument. Ye know him I am sure; yet I for honours sake, and may it be eternall to him, shall name him, the Lord Brook. He writing of Episcopacy, and by the way treating of sects and schisms, left Ye his vote, or rather now the last words of his dying charge, which I know will ever be of dear and honour'd regard with Ye, so full of meeknes and breathing charity, that next to his last testament, who bequeath'd love and peace to his Disciples, I cannot call to mind where I have read or heard words more mild and peacefull. He there exhorts us to hear with patience and humility those, however they be miscall'd, that desire to live purely, in such a use of Gods Ordinances, as the best guidance of their conscience gives them, and to tolerat them, though in some disconformity to our selves. The book it self will tell us more at large being publisht to the world and dedicated to the Parlament by him who both for his life and for his death deserves, that what advice he left be not laid by without perusall.

And now the time in speciall is by priviledge to write and speak what may help to the furder discussing of matters in agitation. The Temple of Janus with his two controversial faces might now not unsignificantly be set open. And though all the windes of doctrin were let loose to play upon the earth, so Truth be in the field, we do injuriously by licencing and prohibiting to misdoubt her strength. Let her and
AREOPAGITICA.

Falshood grapple; who ever knew Truth put to the
wors in a free and open encounter? Her confuting
is the best and surest suppressing. He who hears what
praying there is for light and clearer knowledge to be
sent down among us, would think of other matters to
be constituted beyond the discipline of Geneva, fram’d
and fabric’d already to our hands. Yet when the new
light which we beg for shines in upon us, there be who
envy and oppose, if it come not first in at their case-
ments. What a collusion is this, whenas we are ex-
horted by the wise man to use diligence, to seek for
wisdom as for hidd’n treasures early and late, that
another order shall enjoin us to know nothing but by
statute! When a man hath bin labouring the hardest
labour in the deep mines of knowledge, hath furnisht
out his findings in all their equipage, drawn forth his
reasons as it were a battell raung’d, scatter’d and de-
feated all objections in his way, calls out his adver-
sary into the plain, offers him the advantage of wind
and sun, if he please, only that he may try the matter
by dint of argument, for his opponents then to sculk,
to lay ambushments, to keep a narrow bridge of licen-
ing where the challenger should passe, though it be
valour anough in shouldiership, is but weaknes and
cowardise in the wars of Truth. For who knows not
that Truth is strong next to the Almighty? She needs
no policies, no stratagems, nor licencings to make her
victorious; those are the shifts and the defences that
error uses against her power. Give her but room, and
30 do not bind her when she sleeps, for then she speaks
not true, as the old Proteus did, who spake oracles
only when he was caught and bound; but then rather
she turns herself into all shapes except her own, and
perhaps tunes her voice according to the time, as Micaiah did before Ahab, untill she be adjur'd into her own likenes. Yet is it not impossible that she may have more shapes then one. What else is all that rank of things indifferent, wherein Truth may be on this side or on the other without being unlike her self? What but a vain shadow else is the abolition of those ordinances, that hand writing nayl'd to the crosse, what great purchase is this Christian liberty which Paul so often boasts of? His doctrine is, that he who eats or eats not, regards a day or regards it not, may doe either to the Lord. How many other things might be tolerated in peace and left to conscience, had we but charity, and were it not the chief strong hold of our hypocrisie to be ever judging one another. I fear yet this iron yoke of outward conformity hath left a slavish print upon our necks; the ghost of a linnen decency yet haunts us. We stumble and are impatient at the least dividing of one visible congregation from another, though it be not in fundamentalls; and through our forwardnes to suppress, and our backwardnes to recover any enthrall'd piece of truth out of the gripe of custom, we care not to keep truth separated from truth, which is the fiercest rent and disunion of all. We doe not see that while we still affect by all means a rigid externall formality, we may as soon fall again into a grosse conforming stupidity, a stark and dead congealment of wood and hay and stubble forc't and frozen together, which is more to the sudden degenerate-rating of a Church then many subdichotomies of petty schisms. Not that I can think well of every light sepa-
ration, or that all in a Church is to be expected gold and silver and pretious stones; it is not possible for man
to sever the wheat from the tares, the good fish from the other frie; that must be the Angels Ministry at the end of mortall things. Yet if all cannot be of one mind, as who looks they should be? this doubtles is more wholesome, more prudent, and more Christian; that many be tolerated rather than all compell'd. I mean not tolerated Popery and open superstition, which as it extirpats all religions and civill supremacies, so it self should be extirpate, provided first that all charitable and compassionat means be us'd to win and regain the weak and misled; that also which is impious or evil absolutely either against faith or maners no law can possibly permit, that intends not to unlaw it self; but those neighboring differences, or rather indifferences, are what I speak of, whether in some point of doctrine or of discipline, which though they may be many, yet need not interrupt the unity of Spirit, if we could but find among us the bond of peace. In the mean while if any one would write, and bring his helpfull hand to the slow-moving Reformation which we labour under, if Truth have spok'n to him before others, or but seem'd at least to speak, who hath so bejesuited us that we should trouble that man with asking licence to doe so worthy a deed? And not consider this, that if it come to prohibiting, there is not ought more likely to be prohibited then truth it self; whose first appearance to our eyes bleard and dimmd with prejudice and custom, is more unsightly and unpleasable then many errors, ev'n as the person is of many a great man slight and contemptible to see to. And what doe they tell us vainly of new opinions, when this very opinion of theirs, that none must be heard but whom they like, is the worst and newest opinion of all others; and is the
chief cause why sects and schisms doe so much abound, and true knowledge is kept at distance from us? Besides yet a greater danger which is in it: for when God shakes a Kingdome with strong and healthfull commotions to a generall reforming, 'tis not untrue that many sectaries and false teachers are then busiest in seducing; but yet more true it is, that God then raises to his own work men of rare abilities and more then common industry not only to look back and revise what hath bin taught heretofore, but to gain furder and goe on some new enlightn'd steps in the discovery of truth. For such is the order of Gods enlightning his Church, to dispense and deal out by degrees his beam, so as our earthly eyes may best sustain it. Neither is God appointed and confin'd, where and out of what place these his chosen shall be first heard to speak; for he sees not as man sees, chooses not as man chooses, lest we should devote our selves again to set places and assemblies and outward callings of men, planting our faith one while in the old Convocation house, and another while in the Chappell at Westminster; when all the faith and religion that shall be there canoniz'd, is not sufficient, without plain convincement and the charity of patient instruction, to supple the least bruise of conscience, to edifie the meanest Christian, who desires to walk in the Spirit, and not in the letter of human trust, for all the number of voices that can be there made; no, though Harry the 7. himself there, with all his leige tombs about him, should lend them voices from the dead, to swell their number. And if the men be erroneous who appear to be the leading schismaticks, what witholds us but our sloth, our self-will, and distrust in the right cause, that we doe not
give them gentle meetings and gentle dismissions, that we debate not and examine the matter throughly with liberal and frequent audience; if not for their sakes, yet for our own, seeing no man who hath tasted learning, but will confesse the many waies of profiting by those who not contented with stale receits are able to manage and set forth new positions to the world? And were they but as the dust and cinders of our feet, so long as in that notion they may serve to polish and brighten the armoury of Truth, ev'n for that respect they were not utterly to be cast away. But if they be of those whom God hath fitted for the speciall use of these times with eminent and ample gifts, and those perhaps neither among the Priests nor among the Pharisees, and we in the hast of a precipitant zeal shall make no distinction, but resolve to stop their mouths, because we fear they come with new and dangerous opinions, as we commonly fore-judge them ere we understand them, no lesse then woe to us, while, thinking thus to defend the Gospel, we are found the persecutors.

There have bin not a few since the beginning of this Parlament, both of the Presbytery and others, who by their unlicent books to the contemp of an Imprimatur first broke that triple ice clung about our hearts, and taught the people to see day. I hope that none of those were the persuaders to renew upon us this bondage which they themselves have wrought so much good by contemning. But if neither the check that Moses gave to young Joshua, nor the countermand which our Saviour gave to young John, who was so ready to prohibit those whom he thought unlicenc't, be not anough to admonish our Elders how unacceptable to God their testy mood of prohibiting is, if neither their own remembrance what
evill hath abounded in the Church by this lett of licencing, and what good they themselves have begun by transgressing it, be not enough, but that they will perswade and execute the most *Dominican* part of the Inquisition over us, and are already with one foot in the stirrup so active at suppressing, it would be no unequall distribution in the first place to suppressse the suppressors themselves; whom the change of their condition hath puft up more then their late experience of harder times hath made wise.

And as for regulating the Presse, let no man think to have the honour of advising ye better then your selves have done in that Order publisht next before this: that no book be Printed, unlesse the Printers and the Authors name, or at least the Printers be register’d. Those which otherwise come forth, if they be found mischievous and libellous, the fire and the executioner will be the time-liest and the most effectuall remedy, that mans prevention can use. For this *authentic* Spanish policy of licencing books, if I have said ought, will prove the most unlicenc’t book it self within a short while; and was the immediat image of a Star-chamber decree to that purpose made in those very times when that Court did the rest of those her pious works, for which she is now fall’n from the Starres with *Lucifer*. Whereby ye may gessse what kinde of State prudence, what love of the people, what care of Religion, or good manners there was at the contriving, although with singular hypocrisie it pretended to bind books to their good behaviour. And how it got the upper hand of your precedent Order so well constified before, if we may belieue those men whose profession gives them cause to enquire most, it may be doubted there was in it the fraud of some old *patentees*
and *monopolizers* in the trade of book-selling; who under pretence of the poor in their Company not to be defrauded, and the just retaining of each man his several copy, which God forbid should be gainsaid, brought divers glosing colours to the House, which were indeed but colours, and serving to no end except it be to exercise a superiority over their neighbours, men who do not therefore labour in an honest profession to which learning is indetted, that they should be made other men's vassals. Another end is thought was aym'd at by some of them in procuring by petition this Order, that having power in their hands, malignant books might the easier scape abroad, as the event shews. But of these Sophisms and Elenchs of marchandize I skill not. This I know, that errors in a good government and in a bad are equally almost incident; for what Magistrate may not be mis-inform'd, and much the sooner, if liberty of Printing be reduc't into the power of a few? But to redresse willingly and speedily what hath bin err'd, and in highest authority to esteem a plain advertisement more then others have done a sumptuous bribe, is a vertue (honour'd Lords and Commons) answerable to Your highest actions, and whereof none can participat but greatest and wisest men.
NOTES.
NOTES.

Page 1. Observe that the Speech opens with what the Greek grammarians called an 'anacoluthon,' = a syntactical 'non sequitur' or incoherence. The sense is plain enough; only the grammatical letter is violated. Such carelessnesses are common in Milton's prose writings, as in 'Clarendon's' and others of the seventeenth century, till Dryden introduced a more correct style. With the instance in the text compare such Latin and Greek uses of the nominative as in Virgil, Æneid, xii. 161, &c.; of the accusative in Sophocles, Antigone 21, &c.; and Thucydides' use of the dative, as in ν. 111, πολλοί γὰρ προφορέντων κ.τ.λ.

Line 1. They who to States, &c., i.e. (i) orators, and (ii) writers.
States = heads of states. Holt White quotes from Milton's translation of Psalm lxxxi:

'God in the great assembly stands
Of kings and lordly States.'

Also from Sidney's Arcadia: 'I can do nothing without all the States of Arcadia; what they will determine I know not,' &c. Compare how the names of their kingdoms are used to denote the kings themselves; as e.g. in King Lear France = King of France, &c.

3. wanting, not = wishing for, or needing, but being without. See below, p. 102.

in a private condition. These words explain how 'access' is 'wanted' = as being private men.

6. alter'd = changed, perturbed. Alter is literally to make other or different.

7. success = issue. The word was by no means confined in Milton's time to a favourable sense. Thus Paradise Regained, iv. 1:

'Perplex'd and troubled at his bad success,
The tempter stood.'

8. censure = opinion. This word in Milton's time was not limited to denote only unfavourable judgment. See Shakspeare passim; as Hamlet, i.
3. 69: 'Take each man's censure, but reserve thy judgment.'
of what, &c. = born of, springing from, based on what.

as the subject was, &c. This speech was published in November, 1644; see Introduction. The works that had preceded it were, Of Reformation in England, Prelatical Episcopacy, Reason of Church Government, Animadversions, &c., all published in 1641; Apology for Smectymnuus in 1642. The Tractate on Education, The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce, and Martin Bucer's Judgment were published in the same year with the Areopagitica.
12. likely. This adverb is still retained in Lowland Scotch, and in the phrase most likely.

[might disclose. What is the grammatical subject to might disclose?] 13. formost. See Morris's English Accidence, § 123.

16. to a passion—into a state of intense feeling, of excitement and enthusiasm. Milton is often 'carried away'—rapt—by his subject in this splendid work.

then—our than. See Morris's English Accidence, § 312.

17. Explain incidentall to a Preface.

18. though I stay not, &c. = though I confess at once.

it = to wish and promote their countries liberty.

22. a certain testimony, if not a Trophye. It will show how ready I am to fight for my country, whether I conquer or not. In this particular cause he was not to conquer for some fifty years. The Areopagitica became a 'trophy' as well as a 'testimony' in 1694. See Introduction.

P. 2, l. 5. to which, &c. Milton had not yet perhaps fully discovered the disheartening fact that the Presbyterian party when in power was to show itself as little capable of an enlightened tolerance as the Episcopalians whom they had overthrown—that 'new foes' were arising

'Threatening to bind our souls with secular chains,' and re-enthral 'free conscience'—that, really as well as etymologically,

'New Presbyter is but Old Priest writ large.'

are . . . arrived. A more accurate phrase than our have arrived.

7. and yet from such a steep disadvantage, &c. We were so sunken that our rising again might well have seemed hopeless and impossible, as was the rising again of the Romans after their decline and fall, all whose 'manhood' (=Lat. virtus, manliness, valour) could not recover them; and yet we have recovered ourselves.

[13. Neither is it, &c. Explain it here.]

15. which if I now first, &c. His Of Reformation in England, for instance, is filled with delight at what he was witnessing, and praise of those who were accomplishing it. See also An Apology for Smectymnuus, passim.

19. unwillingest. See below, p. 93.

22. courtship. See Comus, 321-5:

'Shepherd, I take thy word,
And trust thy honest offer'd courtesy,
Which oft is sooner found in lowly sheds
With smoky rafters, than in tap'stry halls
And courts of princes, where it first was named
And yet is most pretended.'

The word court is itself of humble origin—from Lat. cohortem = a farmyard; see Max Müller's Lectures on the Science of Language, 2nd Series.

25. the other here denotes the third of the 'three principal things'—what is called the latter just below. So sometimes in Elizabethan English book, the conjunction, is used when more than two objects are linked together; so
also neither. This use of other is the more odd, because it is in fact the native word for second. Second is a French word.

28. heretofore. See especially Animadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence against Smectymnuus, and An Apology for Smectymnuus.

29. rescuing, &c. See An Apology for Smectymnuus; especially Sect. viii. p. 89, Of Works: 'And can this private concoctor of malecontent at the very instant when he pretends to extol the parliament, afford thus to blur over rather than to mention that public triumph of their justice and constancy, so high, so glorious, so reviving to the fainted commonwealth, with such a suspicious and murmuring expression as to call it "some proceedings"? [He is dealing with Hall's remarks on the execution of Strafford.] And yet immediately he falls to glossing, as if he were the only man that rejoiced at these times. But I shall discover to ye, readers, that this his praising of them is as full of nonsense and scholastic foppery as his meaning he himself discovers to be full of close malignity. His first encomium is,' &c, &c. For another eulogy of the Long Parliament see The Judgment of Martin Bucer concerning Divorce: 'And having now perfected a second edition, I referred the judging thereof to your high and impartial sentence, honoured lords and commons. For I was confident, if anything generous, anything noble and above the multitude were left yet in the spirit of England, it could be nowhere sooner found, and nowhere sooner understood than in that house of justice and true liberty where ye sit in council.'

him who went about, &c. = Hall, Bishop of Norwich, 'the Remonstrant,' who had answered Smectymnuus, and in his answer had 'damned' the Parliament 'with faint praise,' as Milton thought; see above. See Hall's Modest Confitutation of a Slanderous and Scurrilous Libel intituled Animadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence against Smectymnuus. Milton calls the praise Hall confers 'trivial, since it deals in commonplace; malignant (disloyal to the Commonwealth), since it assumes that the Parliament is inseparable from the Crown.' (Jebb.) Hall was of no mean note in literature, quite apart from the Smectymnuus controversy, in which he was so mercilessly derided. He was one of our earliest writers of formal satire; his Virgidierum was published in 1597–9; but his prose is better than his verse. His Occasional Meditations enjoyed and deserved a wide popularity. He was born at Bristow Park, Leicestershire; died at Heigham, whither he retired after his deposition from his bishopric, in 1656.

went about to, &c. = found and took the way to, set himself to. Hooker's Ecclesiastical Polity, I. 1: 'He that goeth about to persuade a multitude,' &c.

P. 3, l. 3. ye. 'The confusion between ye and you did not exist in Old English. Ye was always used as a nom., and you as a dat. or acc. In the English Bible this distinction is very carefully observed, but in the dramatists of the Elizabethan period there is a very loose use of the two forms. Not only is you used as a nom., but ye is used as an acc.' Morris's Historical Outlines of English Accidence, § 155.
11. equall = fair, equitable; Lat. aequus; Ezek. xxxiii. 20. Cp. unequall, below, p. 50.

12. when as. Cp. whereas, wheroas, wherso, whoso, &c. As (= all so = all so) and so may have been affixed to certain relative words to give greater precision of meaning; thus whereas = just where, whenas = just when. Comp. Gr. δὴ as in εἰρηνῇ, &c.


‘Their orators thou then extoll’st, as those
The top of eloquence, statists indeed
And lovers of their country.’

See also Hamlet, v. 2. 33.

16. a triennial Parliament. It was provided by the Act passed Feb. 15, 1641, ‘for the prevention of inconveniences happening by the long intermission of parliaments’ (16 Car. I. c. 1), that Parliament should meet at least once in three years, &c. This Act was repealed in 1664 (16 Car. II. c. 1). It must not be confounded with what is called ‘the Triennial Bill,’ passed in 1694, repealed in 1716, which enacted that no Parliament should in future sit more than three years.

17. that jealous hauteinesse, &c. He refers generally to those infamous courts, the Star Chamber and the Court of High Commission; and more particularly to the Committee of Council, or Committee of State, ‘which was reproachfully after called the Junto, and enviously then in the Court the Cabinet.’ (Clarendon.) Cp. ‘the politic Cabin at Whitehall.’ (Elkonoklastes.)
cabin Counsellors. The diminutive form cabin, which we now prefer, is also found in Elizabethan writers; thus Bacon’s Essays, Of Counsell: ‘The doctrine of Italy and practice of France, in some kings’ times, hath introduced cabinet counsellors.’ Cabinet is the Fr. cabane, the Low Lat. capanna, which is perhaps of Keltic origin; see Brachet, Diez, Wedgwood. Brachet quotes from Isidore of Seville: ‘Tugurium parva casa est; hoc rustici capanna vocant.’

[19. in the midd’st of your victories and successes. Make a list of these.]

20. brooking. This brook is from the Oldest Eng. brüo, cognate with Germ. brauchen, Lat. fruor, fructus, &c. It occurs in the sense of ‘enjoy’ in the older version of Chevy Chase, l. 129:

‘But, perse, and I brook my lyffe, thy deth well quyte shall be.’

See Skeat’s Specimens from 1394 to 1579, p. 74; also Morris’s Chaucer’s Prologue, Glossary. Brook, a streamlet, is cognate with break, &c.

25. civill = refined, polished, cultivated. So civility = civilisation; thus Davies on Ireland, apud Johnson: ‘Divers great monarchies have risen from barbarism to civility, and fallen again to ruin.’ See Jerram’s Par. Reg. iv. 83.

28. of being new or insolent = of doing anything that seems strange or overweening. Or insolent may have its older meaning of ‘unusual,’ ‘extra-ordinary’; see Trench’s Select Glossary.
NOTES.

30. the old and elegant humanity of Greece. Perhaps no one—at least
no modern—has ever studied the Greek writers with intenser appreciation
and delight than Milton. See his Letter to Leonard Philaras the Athenian
(1654): ‘I have always been devotedly attached to the literature of Greece,
and particularly to that of your Athens.’ See his works passim. The
Areopagitica itself is an illustration: scarcely more notable even in point of
form is the Samson Agonistes. In the medieval universities the term
‘humanity’ was used especially of Latin culture, as still in Scotland. Greek
culture was a comparatively new, and still a rare thing in the seventeenth
century.

31. of a Hunnish and Norwegian stateliness=of the dictatorial overbearing
Huns and Goths of the so-called Dark Ages. On the Huns see Smith’s
Gibbon, iii. ch. 26.

32. polite=polished, refined. ‘Polite learning’ was a common phrase
in the last century. For some account of the Revival of Learning, see
Hallam’s Middle Ages, last chapter, and the first chapter of his Literature of
Europe. A worthy history of that great movement has yet to be written.


Jutlanders, i.e. rude and barbarous as were our ancestors before they
were refined by southern civilisation. Jutes are said to have settled in
Hampshire and the Isle of Wight. See Smith’s Marsh’s Lectures on the
English Language, p. 10; Vernon’s Anglo-Saxon Guide, p. 118, &c.

3. persuades=is for persuading. So often the present in Latin.
7. Cities=States, Lat. civitates.
Siniories=lordships, baronies. So Shakspere, Tempest, i. 2. 70–72:
‘As at that time
Through all the signiories it was the first,
And Prospero the prime duke,’ &c.

Richard II, iii. 1. 22, iv. 1. 89.

9. Dion Prusaeus was surnamed Chrysostomos, or of the golden lips, for
his eloquence. He was born at Prusa in Bithynia, about the middle of the
first century of our aera; presently went to Rome. Expelled with other
philosophers by Domitian, he travelled in Thrace, Mysia, Scythia, and
amongst the Getae; he returned to Rome immediately after the accession
of Nerva; then to Prusa about 100 A.D., whence in disgust with the petty-
mindedness of his fellow-citizens he went back to Rome, where he died about
117 A.D. Niebuhr, in his Lectures on Roman History, iii. 235, 3rd edit. ed.
Schmitz, speaks with great admiration of his talents. See Smith’s larger Greek
and Roman Biography. The speech here referred to is the Rhodian Discourse
(’Ποδαρχος λόγος’), in which the orator makes his protest against the Rhodian
habit of re-using, so to speak, their public statues, which were from time
to time made to do duty for the reigning favourites, the inscriptions altered.

13. a life wholly dedicated to studious labours. See Eleg. i. 25:
Tempora nam licet hic placidis dare libera Musis,
Et totum rapiunt me, mea vita, libri.

Ad Familiare, Ep. vi: 'It is also in my favour that your method of study is such as to admit of frequent interruptions, in which you visit your friends, write letters, or go abroad; but it is my way to suffer no impediment, no love of ease, no avocation whatever, to chill the ardour, to break the continuity, or divert the completion of my literary pursuits.' Also Ep. vii, where he gives some account of his studies: 'I went through the perusal of the Greek authors to the time when they ceased to be Greeks,' &c.

Apology for Smythymnus: '... the wearisome labours and studious watchings, wherein I have spent and tired out almost a whole youth.' On Education: 'But if you can accept of these few observations which have flowered off, and are as it were the burnishing of many studious and contemplative years, altogether spent in the search of religious and civil knowledge and such as pleased you so well in the relating, I here give you them to dispose of.' A Treatise on Christian Doctrine: 'I entered upon an assiduous course of study in my youth,' &c.

14. those natural endowments, &c. He was not always without doubt as to whether his genius could flourish in our latitude, so 'far from the sun and summer gale' (see Gray's Progress of Poesy, 83), whose beams and breath had fostered the wits of Greece. See Reason of Church Government, ii: 'If to the instinct of nature and the imboldening of art, aught may be trusted; and that there be nothing adverse in our climate or the fate of this age, it haply would be no rashness, from an equal diligence and inclination, to present the like offer in our own ancient stories.' Paradise Lost, ix. 41-47:

'Me of these
Nor skilled nor studious, higher argument
Remains, sufficient of itself to raise
That name, unless an age too late, or cold
Climate, or years, damp my intended wing
Depress'd; and much they may, if all be mine,
Not hers, who brings it nightly to my ear.'

the worst. It is possible worst may be a misprint for worse; but there is no authority for saying that it is so. Certainly the worst gives a quite satisfactory meaning,—one wholly different from that which the worse would give. [State distinctly the respective meanings.]

16. derogated = subtracted, the opp. of arrogated. See Cicero, pro Roscio Amerino 32: 'Non mihi tantum derogat, tametsi nihil arrogat.' Milton means that, studious as he has been and happy as he is in his birth country, yet he cannot equal himself with those orators to whom he has just referred: what is wanting in him as compared with those orators must be more than compensated for by the superiority of the audience he addresses to those whom they for the most part addressed.

forbore, because I could not obtain from myself to shew Absalom unfortunate.


P. 5, l. 3. *that part which preserves,* &c. = which acknowledges and protects copyright. See in the Order the sentence beginning, 'And that no person or person shall hereafter print, or cause to be printed,' &c. Cp. Clause vii. of the Star Chamber Decree.

4. *or provides for the poor.* See that same sentence.

6. *painful = painstaking, laborious.* See Trench's Select Glossary, s.v. Fuller's Holy State, ii. 6: 'O the holiness of their living and painfulness of their preaching.'

7. Observe the divisions of the Speech here proposed. He will point out who are


II. 'What is to be thought in general of reading books, whatever sort they be, and whether be more the benefit or harm that thence proceeds,' pp. 13–22.

III. 'That this order of licensing conduces nothing to the end for which it was framed,' pp. 22–29.

IV. It will not only do no good; it will do immense harm in discouraging the pursuit of learning and the search after truth, pp. 29 to end.

*that other clause,* &c. See the sentence beginning 'It is therefore ordered,' &c.

*brother* is adjectival here, = brother-like, i.e. kindred, cognate. Comp. *brother-love* in Henry VIII, v. 3. 173. For the meaning comp. the Greek ἀδελφός, as in Soph. Antig. 192: καὶ νῦν ἀδελφὰ τῶν ἀδέλφων ἔχω. Notice too our common use of 'sister' in a metaphorical sense.

8. *his.* *Its* was scarcely yet admitted into literary English. See note on *its* in Longer English Poems, p. 223; also Morris's English Accidence, § 172.

*quadragesimal* = Lenten. Thus Sanderson *apud* Johnson: 'I have composed prayers out of the Church Collects adventural, quadragesimal, paschal, or pentecostal.' Holt White quotes from Cartwright's Ordinary:

'But quadragesimal wits and fancies lean.
As Ember weeks.'

(Hazlitt's Dodshley's Old English Plays, xii. 268.) Comp. Quadragesima Sunday = 1st Sunday in Lent. Milton here refers to the restrictions as to food during Lent, which were in some degree retained by the English Church after the Reformation. Certain days were appointed for 'fish-days,' for the non-observance of which 'licenses' were granted. 'Queen Elizabeth used to say that she would never eat flesh in Lent without obtaining license from her little black husband' (= Archbishop Whitgift). (Walton's life of Hooker.) See also 2 Henry IV, ii. 4. 375.

9. *matrimonial* = marriage licenses. Milton regarded marriage simply as a civil contract, not at all as a 'sacrament.' It was formally made so by an Ordinance, and in 1653 by an Act of Parliament, ratified in 1656. See
The Likeliest Means to remove Hirelings out of the Church: 'As for marriages, that ministers should meddle with them, as not sanctified or legitimate without their celebration, I find no ground in Scripture either of precept or example. Likeliest it is (which our Selden hath well observed, l. ii. c. 58 Ux. Eb.) that in imitation of heathen priests, who were wont at nuptials to use many rites and ceremonies, and especially judging it would be profitable and the encrease of their authority not to be spectators only in a business of such concernment to the life of man, they insinuated that marriage was not holy without their benediction, and for the better colour made it a Sacrament, being of itself a civil ordinance, a household contract,' &c., &c. (Works, p. 431.)

_when the Prelats expired._ Episcopacy was not formally abolished till October 9, 1646; but the bishops had lost their 'status' some years before. They were ejected from the House of Peers early in 1641, and so had 'expired' as 'prelates,' the title 'prelates' denoting their civil position: see Holt White's note on Prelaty and Episcopacy, p. 122.

_attend = turn towards, direct my mind to._ So the Latin attendo, as Cicero, Philippius, ii. 12. 30: 'Stuporem hominis attendite.'

10. homily. Cp. As You Like It, iii. 2. 164: 'What tedious homily of love have you wearied your parishioners withal, and never cried Have patience, good people.' The word originally means (i) 'communion,' 'intercourse'; (ii) then especially the association of pupil with master, and so instruction; and (iii) lastly, a special form of ecclesiastical instruction. For (ii) see Xenophon's Memorabilia, i. 2. 6: Τοὺς δὲ λαμβάνων τῆς διμήλας μεσθάν ἄνθρωποι ταυτὰν ἄνεκάλει διὰ τὸ ἀναγκαῖον αὐτοῖς εἶναι διαλέγοντες παρ' αὐτὸν, ἀν λάβοιν τὸν μυσθὸν. So Lb. 15; comp. διμήλας in 12. (Comp. φοίτως εἰς τυχα, as Aristophanes, Equites 1235.)

18. disexercising. I cannot find any other occurrence of this word.

19. cropping. The A.S. crop = top, bunch, crow of a bird. According to Wedgwood the radical notion is a knob; Gael. crap, cnap, Welsh crub, crub, crub, Ital. groppo. In Piers Plowman, xvi. 42, B. text, it = a tree-top; cp. Chaucer's Prologue 7. To crop = to take the top off; comp. to top, to skin, to peel, &c.

22. He now addresses himself to Point I, see p. 67.

27. but doe contain, &c. Cp. Bacon's Advancement of Learning, I. viii. 6, p. 72, ed. Aldis Wright: 'It is not possible to have the true pictures or statues of Cyrus, Alexander, Caesar, no, nor of the kings or great personages of much later years; for the originals cannot last, and the copies cannot but leese of the life and truth. But the images of men's wits and knowledges remain in books, exempted from the wrong of time and capable of perpetual renovation. Neither are they fitly to be called images because they generate still and cast their seeds in the minds of others, provoking and causing infinite actions and opinions in succeeding ages.' &c.
29. violl = vial = phial, Gr. φιάλη.
32. those fabulous Dragons teeth. See the story of Jason, how by Medea's direction he sowed the teeth of the Colchian dragon, and there sprang up men all armed. Ovid's Metamorphoses, vii. 121, et seq.:

'Galea tum sumit ahena
Vipereos dentes, et aratos spargit in agros.
Semeni mollit humus,' &c.

The story is charmingly told in the eighth book of Morris's Jason. Cp. the story of Cadmus, also that of Deucalion.

[P. 6. l. 2. What does almost qualify?]
6. a burden to the Earth. Cp. the Homeric ἄχθος ἀροβής (Iliad, xviii. 104; Odyssey, xx. 379). So Lat. pondera terrae. (Liddell and Scott.)
7. life-blood. Shakspere, 3 Henry VI, i. 4. 138:

'How couldst thou drain the life blood of the child?'

Merchant of Venice, iii. 2. 269, &c.; Paradise Lost, viii. 467. The word probably points to some old physiological theory as to the identity of life and blood. Cp. Genesis ix. 4: 'But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat.'

[8. What is meant by on purpose here?]
10. revolutions of ages, &c. Thus the wisdom of the ancient world was lost with the fall of the Roman empire, and not recovered in any considerable degree for many a long century; and certainly Europe fared the worse.
12. the worse. 'The' here is an old ablative = ἐκ, ἐκεῖ. Cp. Latin eo.

See Morris's English Accidence, § 178.
18. an elementall life, &c. Cp. Paradise Lost, iii. 714–21:

'Swift to their several quarters hasted then
The cumbrous element, earth, flood, air, fire;
And this ethereal quintessence of heaven
Flew upward, spirited with various forms,
That rolled orbicular and turned to stars,' &c.

So Uriel, the sun-angel, to Satan, of the creation of the world. 'This notion our author borrowed from Aristotle and others of the ancient philosophers, who supposed that besides the four elements there was likewise an ethereal quintessence or fifth essence, and its motion was orbicular: εἶναι δὲ πορὰ τὰ τέσσαρα στοιχεῖα καὶ ἄλλο πέμπτον, ἢ ὥσπερ τὰ αἰθέρια συνεστάναι ἄλλων δ' αὐτοῦ τὴν κίνησιν εἶναι, κυκλοφορικὴν γὰρ; which are the very words of Diogenes Laertius in his life of Aristotle.' (Newton.)


21. condemned of, &c. We should say 'condemned for'; but we still say 'accused of,' 'convicted of.' Holt White quotes from Lily's Euphues:

'That thou shouldest condemn me of rigor,' &c.
22. license. State clearly the two different meanings of license, on which there is a play here.

26. the Inquisition. 'The Holy Inquisition,' or 'The Holy Office' (Sanctum Officium), was first conceived by Pope Innocent III, when, about the beginning of the thirteenth century, the Albigenses dared to entertain irregular doctrines. After that execrable inauguration, it was presently introduced into other parts of France, into Italy, and, in the face of much notable opposition, into Spain; but its power declined everywhere, partly because there arose no fresh victims for its energy. In the last-named country, towards the close of the fifteenth century, it was revived and organized by Ferdinand and Isabella, to whom it recommended itself as an excellent instrument for plundering the Jews and crushing the Mahomedans of the peninsula. The Cardinal Pedro Gonzalez de Mendoza lent his help. Thomas de Torquemada, prior to the Dominican convent at Segovia and father-confessor to Mendoza, was appointed first Grand Inquisitor in 1478. 'He had two hundred familiars and a guard of fifty horsemen.' The new court was opened at Seville in 1481. 'Spanish writers relate that above seventeen thousand gave themselves up to the Inquisition; more than two thousand were condemned to the flames the first year, and great numbers fled to neighbouring countries.' In 1483 the Pope, who had opposed the new institution, as the conversion of an ecclesiastical into a secular tribunal, formally acknowledged Torquemada. In 1484 the jurisdiction was accurately defined. As late as 1763 'heretics' were burned by this deadly Office. It was abolished by Napoleon in 1808, revived in 1814, abolished again and finally in 1820. See Popular Encyclopaedia, s. v., which quotes from Llorente's History of the Spanish Inquisition (Paris, 1815; in English, London, 1827).

27. catch, . . . caught. Observe the two forms of the past participle. Milton seems to regard 'catch up' as a compound, and inflects it differently from the simple verb.

28. Presbyter. Presbyterianism had now superseded Episcopalianism. Milton was presently to discover that the new 'ism' was as little liberal as the old. See above, p. 62.

29. Athens where, &c. See Paradise Regained, iv. 240-43:

'Athen, the eye of Greece, mother of arts
And eloquence, native to famous wits
Or hospitable, in her sweet recess,
City or suburban, studious walks and shades.'

Cp. the great speech of Pericles, Thucydides, ii. 36-44, especially 41: ἵνα δὲν ἀνέκατά τήν τε πᾶσαν πόλιν τής Ἑλλάδος παίδευσιν εἶναι, κ.τ.λ. See Jerram's Par. Reg. iv. 239.

33. Thus the Books of Protagoras, &c. He does not aim at being exhaustive, or he might have mentioned the indictments of Anaxagoras and of Aspasia for 'impiety.' See Grote's Greece, iv. 231, edit. 1862.

Protagoras, the first 'Sophist,' was born at Abdera in Thrace, about
b.c. 480. Before 445 he was living at Athens, where, in 411, he was accused of impiety by one Puthodoros, on the ground that in a book on the gods (μελὴ θεῶ) he had stated that he was unable to know whether they existed or not. See Diogenes Laertius, ix. 54. Socrates in Plato's Theaetetus, 162 D, makes Protagoras or ἀλος τις ὑπὲρ αὐτῶν speak of the gods as ὡς ἄγω ἐκ τοῦ λόγου καὶ τοῦ γράφειν περὶ αὐτῶν, ὡς εἶσον ἤ ὡς οὐκ εἶσον, ἐκαίρω.

P. 7, l. 1. Areopagus. See Introduction.

6. Vetus Comedia = the earlier Greek comedy—the comedy of Kratinos, Eupolis, Aristophanes; Horace's 'Comedia prisca.' (Satires, i. 4. 1–5.) It indulged in the broadest personalities (see Aristophanes' plays passim, e.g. his representations of Kleon, of Sokrates, of Euripides); and at last was muzzled. See Horace, Ep. ad Pisones, 281–84:

' Successit vetus his comedia, non sine multa
Laude; sed in vitium libertas excidit et vim
Dignam lege regi; lex est accepta, chorusque
Turpiter obticuit sublato jure nocendi.'


8. as Cicero writes. See his De Natura Deorum, i. 23: 'Quid? Diagoras, atheos qui dictus est, posteaque Theodorus, nonne aperte deorum naturam sustulerunt? Nam Abderes quidem Protagoras, cujus a te modo mentio facta est, Sophistes temporibus illis vel maximus, cum in principio libri sui sic posuisset, "De divis neque ut sint neque ut non sint habeo dicere," Atheniensium jussu urbe atque agro est exterminatus librique ejus in concione combusti. Ex quo quidem existimo tardiores ad hanc sententiam profitendam multos esse factos, quippe cum poenam ne dubitatio quidem effugere potuisset.'

quell = kill. See 2 Hen. IV, ii. 159; Macb. i. vii. 72; Par. Reg. iv. 634.

9. as the event shew'd. Observe 'obticuit' in the quotation given above from Horace.

13. Epictetus was born in Samos b.c. 342, went to live at Athens in 306, there founded a famous school, and died in 270. His leading ethical tenet, that men were to be virtuous in order to be happy, was soon distorted. All that was observed was the end he proposed. The means for acquiring it which he enjoined were ignored; and thus Epicureanism was degraded into mere self-indulgence, and the garden became 'a sty.'

that libertine school of Cyrene = the school founded by Aristippos about b.c. 370. He identified the chief good with pleasure. Cicero's Academica, ii. 42. 131: 'Allii voluptatem finem esse voluerunt, quorum princeps Aristippos, qui Socratem audierat, uide Cyrenaici'; see also Tusculanae Disputationes, ii. 6. 15. He would let nothing trouble him if he could help it. When on a journey his gold impeded his progress, he ordered it to be thrown away. See Horace, Satires, ii. 3. 99–102; also Epistles, i. 17. 13–15, and i. 17–18:

' Nunc in Aristippo furtim praecepta relabor,
Et mihi res, non me rebus, subjungere conors.'

libertine = originally a manumitted slave, as always in pure Latin. So
Acts vi. 9. In various modern languages the word has been adopted in a secondary sense to denote one released from all proper moral restraint, who acknowledges no law. See Shakspere, Hamlet, i. 3. 49; Bacon’s Essays, on Marriage, &c. In the seventeenth century, in religious matters libertines = ‘free-thinkers.’ See Trench’s Select Glossary. The moral the word conveys —how unregulated liberty becomes license—may be illustrated from Wordsworth’s Ode to Duty; see especially

‘Me this unchartered freedom tires;
I feel the weight of chance desires.’

14. the Cynick impudence. The phrase, as Holt White notes, is from Diogenes Laertius (πρὸς τὴν κυνικὴν ἀναχωρήσιαν, p. 164, fol. 1664). Antisthenes, a pupil of Sokrates—he had previously been a pupil of Gorgias—formed a school on Sokrates’ death, and chose for his place of meeting a public place in that quarter of Athens called the Cynosarges, from which some say the sect of Cynics derives its name; others derive it from the snarling propensities of the founder, who was frequently called ‘the Dog.’ The fame of Antisthenes has been surpassed by that of his disciple Diogenes of Sinope. Milton means by ‘the Cynic impudence’ that insolence of manner and of language, that rude and unqualified contempt of humanity, that especially characterised the philosopher of the tub. See the various anecdotes of him; e.g. he said he had never seen men; at Sparta he had seen children; at Athens, women. Lewes’ Biographical History of Philosophy; Ritter and Preller’s Hist. Phil. Gr. et Rom. §§ 321–8.


the loosest of them all. Aristophanes is ‘loose’ as Chaucer is ‘loose’; that is, he is at times altogether plain-spoken. There is nothing in him of the infinitely worse ‘looseness’ of innuendo and suggestion, no undercurrent of indecency beneath a respectable surface.


20. holy Chrysostome = ‘Saint’ Chrysostom, Bishop of Constantinople, the eloquent ‘Father’; born at Antioch about 347, died at Comana in Asia Minor 407 A.D. See Gibbon’s Roman Empire, iv. ch. 32: ‘The sixth book of Socrates, the eighth of Sozomen, and the fifth of Theodoret, afford curious and authentic materials for the life of John Chrysostom.’

as is reported, &c. See a letter from Æmilius Portus, in an epistle to Bisæus, one of the scholiasts of Aristophanes, quoted in the Encyclopaedia
Metropolitana, History of Greek Literature. Holt White quotes from Menage’s vindication of himself for reading Rabelais: ‘Clément Alexandrin cite à toute heure Aristophanes. S. Jan. Chrysostome le lisoit continuellment, et le mettoit la nuit sous son chevet, si on en croit Alde Manuce dans la Dédicace des Œuvres de ce Comique; car je ne sait point d’auteur plus ancien qui ait fait mention de cette amitié de S. Jan Chrysostome pour les Comédies d’Aristophane.’ (Avis au Lecteur, prefixed to the second part of his Observations sur la Langue Françoise.) But here, as elsewhere, Menage’s knowledge was at fault. Plato is said to have pillowed his head on a copy of Sophron’s Mimes.

24. Lycurgus, the Spartan lawgiver, flourished in the ninth century B.C. See Grote, ii. chap. 6, ‘Laws and Discipline of Lycurgus at Sparta.’

25. was so addicted, ccc. Milton’s authority here is Plutarch’s Life of Lycurgos: ἐκεῖ δὲ [in ‘Asia’] καὶ τοῖς Ὀμήρου ποιήσαις έννυχών πρώτον, ὃς ἔσσει, κ.τ.λ. = ‘There also, probably, he met with Homer’s poems, which were preserved by the posterity of Cleophylus. Observing that many moral sentences and much political knowledge were intermixed with his stories, which had an irresistible charm, he collected them into one body and transcribed them with pleasure, in order to take them home with him. For his glorious poetry was not yet fully known in Greece; only some particular pieces were in a few hands, as they happened to be dispersed. Lycurgus was the first that made them generally known.’ (Langhorne.)

27. the poet Thales, or Thaetas, not to be confounded with ‘the Wise Man’ of Miletus. See Plutarch’s Lycurgos: ‘Among the friends he gained at Crete was Thales, with whom he had interest enough to persuade him to go and settle at Sparta. . . . For his Odes were so many persuasives to obedience and unanimity; as by means of melody and numbers they had great grace and power, they softened insensibly the manners of the audience, drew them off from the animosities which then prevailed, and united them in zeal for excellence and virtue.’ (Langhorne.) See the account of Thaetas—he ‘makes the third epoch in the history of Greek music’—in Donaldson’s Müller: ‘In fact Thaetas lived several centuries [probably two] later than Lycurgus, having been one of the musicians who assisted in perfecting Terpander’s musical system at Sparta and giving it a new and fixed form.’

28. surliness, Surly = etymologically, sour-like. In A.S. the adj. sûrelie does not seem to occur; but there is the adv. presumably formed from it, viz. sûrelisce. Cp. Germ. sünnerlich. Wedgwood’s suggestion that it is from ‘sirlike, magisterial, arrogant,’ seems not very valuable.

30. museless = ἄμουσοι, as Euripides, Ion 526:

οὗ φιλῶ φρενοῖν άμούσους καὶ μεμνήτωσε ξένως.
Aristophanes, Vespae 1074, &c. Plato couples ἄμυοσία with ἀπειροκαλία, Republic, 403 C.

33. their owne Laconick Apotheigms. Plato speaks of βραχυλογία τις Δακωνική = ‘a sort of laconic terseness’ (Protagoras, 343 B). In his De Legibus (641 E) he speaks of Lacedaemon being commonly known as βραχύ-
λόγος, Crete as πολύλογος, &c. The ancient writers, and indeed the modern, abound with references to, and instances of, this Spartan characteristic. See Plutarch’s Lives passim, and his (or his son’s) collection of Apothegms; Cicero’s Ep. Fam. xi. 25. 2, &c. It has given us the word laconic in the sense of terse.

apothegms. Properly spelled apophthegms. Gr. ἀπόφθεγμα, lit. = something said plainly.

P. 8, l. i. Archilochus. Flor. 714–676 B.C. ‘Plutarch (Inst. Lacon. 239 B) states that Archilochus was banished from Sparta the very hour that he arrived there because he had written in his poems that a man had better throw away his arms than lose his life. But Valerius Maximus (vi. 3, extr. 1) says that the poems of Archilochus were forbidden at Sparta because of their licentiousness, and especially on account of the attack on the daughter of Lycambes. It must remain doubtful whether a confusion has been made between the personal history of the poet and the fate of his works,’ &c. (Smith’s Dict.) For further account of him see Donaldson’s Müller, Grote, iii. chap. 29, &c. The lines which, according to Plutarch’s account, disgusted Spartan fortitude may be found in Schneidewin’s Delectus Poet. Elegiac. Graec. p. 173:

ἀποίδο μὲν Σατων τις ἀγάλληται, ἡν παρὰ θάμνῳ
ἐντος δὲμάμπτων κάλλων υμνέθαις
αὐτὸς δ’ ἔξαφνον θανάτων τέλον ἄπις ἐκείη
ἐρέτων ἐξαιτία κθέσμα ων κακίον.

2. perhaps for composing, &c. Unhappily what remains of Archilochus’ writing is too fragmentary to enable us to form any adequate idea of him. Horace imitated him in his Epodes ‘as to form and spirit, but not as to subject’; see Horace, Ep. i. 19. 23–25:

‘Farios ego primus iambos
Ostendi Latio, numeros animumque securus
Archilochi, non res et agentia verba Lycamben.’

3. their owne souldery ballats, &c. The most famous writer of these war songs was in all probability not a Spartan born, but a native of Aphidnae in Attica; it was Tyrtaeus. See what remains of him in Schneidewin.

ballats and roundels are often mentioned together. See e.g. Warthon’s Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. 1840, ii. 222 note: ‘About this time [1380] a Prior of Genevieve at Paris wrote a small treatise, entitled L’Art de dictier Ballades et Rondelles,’ &c.

ballats. Ballat or ballad, Fr. ballade, is by no means confined in older usage to its present meaning of a certain kind of popular narrative poem. It came to be so confined, I think, only in the last century on the revival of medieval literature. In the older writers it means a song of any sort; thus Shakspere in As You Like It (ii. 7. 146) speaks of

‘the lover

Sighing like furnace, with a woeful ballot
Made to his mistress’ eyebrow,’ &c.
No doubt it originally denoted a dance-song (cp. the following note on Roundel); and is cognate with our ball (a dance-party), ballet, &c., from Low Lat. ballare, Ital. ballare, to dance. For the spelling, comp. ballet.

roundels, Fr. rondelles. Cp. roundelay, Fr. rondelet. Roundel properly means 'anything round,' as a shield, a trenched, &c.; see Nares' Glossary. In Midsummer Night's Dream, ii. 3. i, &c., roundel = a dance; not what we call 'a round dance,' but a dance in a ring. From meaning 'a ring dance' it was used for a song sung by the dancers, or during a dance; cp. i. c.:

'Come, now a roundel and a fairy song."

(See at this day in the Faroe Islands: 'They use no instrumental music, but dance to songs. . . . . The object of the song is not only to regulate the steps, but at the same time to awaken certain feelings by its meaning.' See Prior's Ancient Danish Ballads, Introduction, p. v.) Stevens says it was sometimes used to signify 'a song beginning or ending with the same sentence; redit in orbem.' Johnson quotes from the Dictionnaire de Trévoux a not inconsistent but much more minute definition. See what Spenser calls a 'roundle' or 'roundelay' in the Shepherd's Calendar, August,

- 6. conversing = manner of life. Cp. 'conversation,' I Pet. i. 15, &c. When Eve says 'with thee conversing' &c. (Paradise Lost, iv. 639) she means not merely 'with thee talking,' but 'with thee associating.' It is the Latin use; thus Seneca's Ep. 99: 'nemo libenter tristi conversatur, nedum tristitiae.'

 whence Euripides, &c. See the Andromache, 590 et seq., where Peleus enters to arrest Menelaus in his seizure of the heroine, and abuses roundly both him and Helen and Spartan ways in respect of women. The lines specially alluded to are:

\[ \text{οὐδ' ἐν ἐλβαλιτό τις σώφρων γένοιτο Σπαρτιατῶν κόρη, κ.τ.λ.} \]

On the 'promiscuous conversing' of Spartan life—how the women lived a public life strangely contrasting with that of the women in other Greek cities—how they despised spinning and weaving, and exercised themselves in running, boxing and wrestling—see Grote's Greece, ii. chap. 6. See Cicero, Tusc. Disp. ii. 15, &c. As to the charge here quoted against them see Plutarch's Lykurgos, chap. 15, who says it was different in the older times, so different ὅπερ δὲλαμ ἀκατήν εἶναι τὸ τῆς μοιχείας παρ' αὐτῶν = that amongst them the crime of adultery was altogether incredible.

8. after = according to, as to, regarding. Cp. 'after our iniquities,' in the Book of Common Prayer.

10. for many ages, &c. See Horace, Ep. ii. i. 156–163:

\[ \text{Graecia capta ferum victorem cepit et artes} \]
\[ \text{Intulit agresti Latio: sic horridus ille} \]
\[ \text{Defluxit numerus Saturnius, et grave virus} \]
\[ \text{Munditiae pepulere; sed in longum tamen aevum} \]
\[ \text{Manuerunt hodieque manent vestigia ruris,} \&c. \]

See also Cicero, Tusc. Disp., i. 1, 2.
11. resembling ... of bearing the semblance of.

12. their twelve Tables = the famous code formed by the Decemvirs; see Dickson’s Mommsen’s History of Rome, book ii. chap. 2. There were originally ten, ‘passed’ in 451; ‘but as a supplement appeared necessary, decemvirs were again nominated in the year 304 [A.U.C.; B.C. 450] who added two more tables. Thus originated the first and only legal code of Rome.’

13. the Pontifics College. See Dickson’s Mommsen, book i. chap. 12: ‘The five “bridge-makers” (pontifices) derived their name from their function, as sacred as it was politically important, of conducting the building and demolition of the bridge over the Tiber. They were the Roman engineers, who understood the mystery of measures and numbers; whence there devolved upon them also the duties of managing the calendar of the state, of proclaiming to the people the time of new and full moon, and the days of festivals, and of seeing that every religious and every judicial act took place on the right day... Thus they acquired (although not probably in its full extent till after the abolition of the monarchy) the general oversight of Roman worship and of whatever was connected with it—and what was there that was not so connected?’ &c.

their Augurs. ‘The six Augurs were skilled in interpreting the language of the gods from the flight of birds, an art which was prosecuted with great earnestness and reduced to a quasi-scientific system.’ Dickson’s Mommsen, i. 178, &c. The au- = avit- = bird.

The Flamens were priests attached to the service of certain special gods, as of Mars, Jupiter, Pomona, &c., and in later times of the deified emperors. Three were of superior distinction (maiores)—those of Jupiter, Mars, and Quirinus (= Mars. See Dickson’s Mommsen, i. 87). Varro derives the name from the fillet worn round the head—‘quod in Latio capite uelato erant semper ac caput cinetum habeant filo.’ More probably the word is connected with flare, and means the ‘kindler,’ as the priest ‘was designated from presenting burnt-offerings.’ See Dickson’s Mommsen, i. 175, &c.


15. that when, &c. This was in 155 B.C. The object of the embassy was to depreciate the fine of 500 talents imposed on the Athenians for the destruction of Oropus. See Cicero, Tusc. Disp. iv. 3; Polybius, xxxiii. 1.

Carneades, born at Cyrene circ. 213, died 129 B.C., was founder of the New Academy at Athens. It was at Rome during his ambassadorial visit in 155 B.C. that he delivered his lectures on Justice, in the second of which he dexterously refuted the arguments advanced in the first.

CritoIus, born at Phaselis in Lycia, succeeded Ariston as the head of the Peripatetic school.

16. the Stoic Diogenes = Diogenes Babylonios (born at Seleucia in Babylonia), succeeded Zeno of Tarsus as the head of the Stoic school. Be sure not to confound him with the Cynic Diogenes. On the Stoics see
Lewes; also Paradise Regained, iv. 300–318. They derived their name from Zeno's having opened his school in the Stoa Poikile.

Emassadors. For the e cp. Embassy. The word is of Teutonic origin.


19. Cato the Censor—the famous Marcus Portius Cato, ‘Cato Major,’ Censor in 184. See Dickson’s Mommsen, ii. 349 et seq. ‘It has been the custom to laugh at Cato for his dogged opposition to everything Greek; but there was much truth in his denunciations. We have heard much of young Bengál—young Hindus who read Byron and Voltaire, play at billiards, drive tandems, laugh at their priests, patronise missionaries, and believe nothing. The description which Cato gives of the young idlers at Rome reminds us very much of young Bengál.’ (Max Müller’s Lectures on the Science of Language, 1st Series, and ed. pp. 98, 99.) Cp. Mommsen, iii. 429: ‘On this occasion at least Cato could not be found fault with when he not only bluntly enough compared the dialectic arguments of the philosophers to the tedious dirges of the wailing women, but also insisted on the senate dismissing a man who understood the art of making right wrong and wrong right, and whose defence was in fact nothing but a shameless and almost insulting confession of injustice.’ See Bacon’s Adv. of Learning, pp. 10, 11, Clar. Press ed.

mov’d it = brought forward a motion. This use of it is common enough in ‘Elizabethan’ English; thus ‘trip it’ in L’Allegro 33, ‘dance it’ in Midsummer Night’s Dream, v. i. 403, &c. See an attempt to explain it in Longer English Poems, p. 236.


Scipio. This was the younger Scipio, the destroyer of Carthage, the friend of Polybius, Terence, Panaetius, and Lucilius; a Scipio by adoption, by birth the son of Lucius Æmilius Paulus. Cicero makes him the chief speaker in his De Republica.

others of the noblest Senators, as Laelius.

22. his old Sabin austerity. Cato was brought up at his father’s farm in the Sabine territory; and to that farm he returned at intervals in his later life, living plainly and frugally after the old fashion, and so protesting by his practice, as always by his theory, against the luxury beginning to prevail in the Rome of his day. He would find the Sabines congenial neighbours. They became proverbial for their rough simple life. See Juvenal, x. 298–9:

‘Sanctos licet horrida mores
Tradiderit domus, ac veteres imitata Sabinos,’ &c.;
also iii. 85 and 169, vi. 164; cp. ‘Curibusque severis,’ Aen. viii. 638, &c.; see other passages referred to by Mayor in his note to Juvenal, l. c. Livy (i. 18) speaks of ‘disciplina tetraca ac tristis veterum Sabinorum quo genere nullum quondam incorruptius fuit.’

24. at last in his old age, &c. Near the close of his life he set himself to study Greek literature. Cornelius Nepos, after mentioning other accomplishments, says of him: ‘cupidissimus literarum fuit; quorum studium eti se plior
arripuerat, tamen tantum progressum fecit ut non facile reaperiri possit neque de Graecis neque de Italics rebus quod ei fuerit incognitum.' In Cicero de Senectute, Cato is made to speak of himself as one 'qui Graecas litteras senex didici.' 'He misliked and cried out upon all Greek learning; and yet being 80 years old, began to learn it; belike fearing that Pluto understood not Latin.' (Sidney's Apol. for Poetrie, p. 56, ed. Arber. Bacon's Adv. of Learning, p. 17 of Clar. Press ed.

26. Naevius and Plautus, &c. See Dickson's Mommsen, book iii. chap. 14. Mommsen speaks of Naevius as 'the first Roman who deserves to be called a poet, and, so far as the accounts preserved regarding him and the few fragments of his works allow us to form an opinion, to all appearances one of the most remarkable and most important names in the whole range of Roman literature,' &c. He was born between 274 and 264 B.C., died about the close of the century. Plautus was born circ. 254, died in 184.

27. The borrowed scenes, &c. See Mommsen, l. c. Menander lived from 342 to 291 B.C. He was more particularly imitated by Terence. Philemon was in date a little senior to Menander. A third 'new comedian' much followed by the Roman playwrights was Diphilus. For what remains of these poets see Meineke's Fragmenta Comicorum Graecorum, and the works of Plautus and Terence passim. Donaldson's Müller's Anc. Gr. Lit.

30. for Naevius, &c. See Dickson's Mommsen, ii. 431: 'Although he did not write exactly original Roman comedies, the few fragments of his, which we possess, are full of references to circumstances and persons in Rome. Among other liberties he not only ridiculed one Theodotus a painter by name, but even directed against the victor of Zama... verses, of which Aristophanes need not have been ashamed: as he himself says,

"Libera lingua loquemur Iudis Liberalibus,"
he probably often wrote offensively and put dangerous questions, such as
"Cedo qui vestram rem publicam tantam amistis tam cito?"
which he answered by an enumeration of political sins, such as
"Proveniebant oratores novi, stulti adullescunti."

But the Roman police was not disposed like the Attic to hold stage-invectives and political diatribes as privileged, or even tolerate them at all,' &c. His sarcasm against the Metelli—

'Fato Metelli Romae fluint consules'—
is said to have specially caused his imprisonment. In his confinement he composed two of his comedies—the Harioles and the Leon; and 'for the sake of these, which were a sort of recantation of his former lampoons, he was set at liberty by the tribunes of the Commons.' (Encycl. Metropol. Rom. Lit.) See Aulus Gellius, i. 24, vi. 18, &c. Plautus is supposed to allude to his confinement in his Miles Gloriosus, ii. 2. 58:

'Ecce autem aedificat; columnam mento suffulsit suo.
Apague! non placet profecto mi illa inaedificatio;
Nam os columnatum poetae esse indauduii barbaro,
Quoi bini custodes semper totis horis accubant.'
32. *that libels were burnt*, &c. See Tacitus' Annals, i. 72: 'Primus Augustus cognitionem de famosis libellis specie legis ejus [=legis Corneliae majestatis] tractavit, commotis Cassii Severi libidine, qua viros feminasque illustres procacibus scriptis diffamaverat,' &c.; see also Suetonius, Augustus 55, and Dio Cassius, lvi. 27. A clause of the Eighth of the Twelve Tables had in fact dealt with libel; see Orelli's Tacitus, l. c.

P. 9, l. 4. *Lucretius*, &c. Lucretius' great poem De Rerum Natura, in which he attacks the monster 'religio'—the degraded and degrading notions of godhead prevailing amongst men—is dedicated to C. Memmius Gemellus, praetor in 58.

5. *his Epicurism*. His poem is a splendid exposition of the doctrines of Epicurus, to whom the poet looked up as to a great deliverer from superstitions, and so one of the greatest benefactors of humanity. See i. 63-79; also v. 1-54, especially 8-12:

'Deus ille fuit deus, inclyte Memmi,
Qui princeps vitae rationem invent eam qua,
Nunc appellatur sapientia, quique per artem
Fluctibus et taptis vitam tantisque tenebris,
In tam tranquillo et tam clara luce locavit.'

*had the honour*, &c. The authority for the statement that Cicero 'set forth' (=edited) Lucretius' poem is the phrase 'Tullii lima dignissimis' applied to his verses by Saint Jerome; see his additions to Eusebius' Chronicon. For Milton's *second time* there is no explicit authority. Jerome would seem to mean that Cicero *first* edited the poem; but his language is not inconsistent with Milton's statement. That he edited it at all cannot be pronounced a fact. It is certain that Cicero speaks with no great enthusiasm of the poem; see Epistolae ad Quintum Fratrem, ii. 11: 'Lucretii poemata ut scribis ita sunt, multis luminibus ingenii, multae tamen artis.' See Munro's Lucretius, text and notes, p. 298, and p. 313, third ed.

7. *himself disputes*, &c. As in his De Finibus Bonorum et Malorum, i and ii; Tusc. Disp. ii and iii; De Nat. Deorum, i and ii, &c.

9. *Satyrical*. The correct form is *satire*, not *satyr*. The latter form was suggested by a supposed derivation of the word from the Greek σαρυπός, whereas it is the Latin (*lans* *satura* or *satura* (*satura* is the purer form).

*Lucilius*, born at Suessa Auruncorum ('magnus Auruncae . . . alumnus,' Juvenal, i. 20) 148, died at Naples 103 B.C. He is generally accounted as the founder ("inventor," Horace, Satires, i. 10. 48) of the school of satire of which Horace, Persius, and Juvenal were subsequently such brilliant members. In Horace's time he was much read and admired. See Horace, Satires, i. 4. x-13, also 10; and ii. 1. 29-34, where Horace declares himself his follower:

'Sequor hunc, Lucanus an Appulas, anceps;'

Juvenal, i. 165-168; Persius, i. 114; Quintilianus, x. 1, &c. See Mommsen, book iii. chap. 14; Sellar's Roman Poets of the Republic. The 'fragments' of Lucilius, of which there are upwards of eight hundred, have been several times printed.
10. Catullus, born at or close by Verona 87, died about 47 B.C.

Flaccus = Horace, whose full name was Quintus Horatius Flaccus. So Juvenal, vii. 227, &c. Similarly Vergil is sometimes designated by his cognomen—the ‘family’ as distinguished from the ‘clan’ name—‘Maro,’ as Juvenal, ibid., Ausonius, Idyllia, iv. 56; Ovid as ‘Naso,’ &c. Conversely, Cicero is sometimes called by his nomen ‘Tully.’ On Roman names see Smith’s Dict. of Antiq.

11. the story = the history. The word story is in fact but the word history ‘decapitated’; cp. censer and incense, Lat. centum and decem, cess and assess, size and assize, &c.

Titus Livius, born at Patavium (Padua) 59 B.C., where, after a life spent mostly at Rome, he died 17 A.D.

though it extoll’d, &c. Time has done what Augustus did not—it has ‘suppressed’ the passage here referred to. Books cix–cxvi, which dealt with the Caesar and Pompey war, are only known to us by extremely meagre epitomes, or rather ‘arguments.’ Milton’s authority for the tolerance shown by Augustus is Tacitus; see Annales, iv. 34, where Cremonius Cordus, prosecuted for eulogising Brutus and Cassius, in his defence maintains the right of free speech, quoting amongst other pertinent precedents: ‘Titus Livius, eloquentiae ac fidei praecipuus in primiti, Cn. Pompeium tantis laudibus tulit ut Pompeianum eum Augustus appellaret; neque id amicitiae corum offecit.’

that part. So Lat. pars, as Cicero, Ep. Fam. x. 31; more commonly in the plural, as Philippius, xiii. 20, &c.

13. Octavius Caesar. This never was his name. Originally he was called ‘Caius Octavius’; after his adoption by his great uncle, ‘Caius Julius Caesar Octavianus’: to this name ‘Augustus’ was added by the Senate and the people in 27 B.C.

faction, here used in a neutral, has generally in Latin, as in English, a bad sense; thus Sallust, Jugurtha 31, in the accusation of Bestia by Memmius: ‘Sed haec [the combination of men bound together by common desires and hatreds and fears] inter bonos amicitia, inter malos factio est.’

14. that Naso, &c. The cause of Ovid’s banishment (‘relegatio,’ not ‘exsiliium’) remains, and probably will always remain, in obscurity. That it was not really his having written the Ars Amatoria, which was the nominal pretext, seems proved by the fact that that work had been published some ten years when in A.D. 9 the poet was suddenly transported to Tomi. He himself speaks of the matter whimsically; he says his fault was involuntary. See his Tristia, and his Ex Ponto passim. See also Ben Jonson’s Poetaster.


in his old age. Ovid was some fifty-two years old at the time of his banishment.

15. a mere covert of state = a mere state pretext.
16. the Books were neither banisht, &c. This is not quite accurate. At
the time of the poet's banishment the Ars Amatoria was ejected from
the public libraries by the Emperor's command.

17. from hence we shall meet, &c. See e.g. Tacitus' Annals and History
passim; as Ann. i. 7: 'at Romae ruere in servitium consules, patres,
eques.' &c.

19. that we may not marvell, &c. See e.g. the account of the burn-
ing of Cresutius Cordus' Annals of Brutus and Cassius in Tacitus' Annals,
iv. 35.

genug. The Moes.-Goth. is ga-noks, an adj.; see Skeat's Moeso-Gothic
Glossary. Other English forms are ynough, ynow, enow, anow; see Morris's
English Accidence, 235.

the emperours, &c. Constantine reigned from 306 to 337. See Smith's
Gibbon, ii and iii; Milman's Hist. of Christ., ii.

27. Hereticks. In classical Greek ἀληθικός = able to choose; intelligent, as
in Aristotle, Magn. M. i. 21; and heresy, ἀληθις = a choosing. In later Greek
ἀληθις, from meaning 'what is chosen,' came to mean a set of views or
principles, and so a school, a sect. In ecclesiastical Greek the word denoted
specially a choice of other views than the received or so-called orthodox;
see 1 Cor. xi. 19; 2 Pet. ii. 1, &c.

29. the generall Counsellors. The first general or oecumenical council was
that convened at Nicaea in Bithynia in 325, when the Nicene Creed was
drawn up. They were called 'general' or 'oecumenical' (=world-repre-
senting) to distinguish them from the local and provincial synods.

30. Authorit. Down into the first half of the 16th cent. the common
forms of the primary substantive seem to have been auctour and auctor;
so in Chaucer, Tyndale, Elyot, &c. (See Skeat's Specimens of Eng. Lit.
pp. 173, 202, &c.)

32. Porphyrius. Porphyry, whose original name was Malchus (= the Syro-
phoenician Melech), born 233, died circ. 305 A.D., was successively a pupil of
Origen, of Apollonius, of Longinus, and of Plotinus. His treatise against
the Christian religion 'called forth replies from above thirty different
antagonists, the most celebrated of whom were Methodius, Apollinaris, and
Eusebius.' The public destruction of the work by order of the Emperor
Constantine seems to have succeeded in its object; no copy is extant.
Smith's Gibbon, ii. 266 n.; Mosheim's Eccles. Hist., i. 70, ed. 1826.

35. Proclus, named Diadochos, as the genuine successor of Plato in
document, was born at Byzantium 412, died 485 A.D. See Smith's Gibbon, v.
92; Morell's Tennemann's Manuai of the History of Philosophy, pp. 192-9.
He was principally offended in the Christian religion by the doctrine of the
creation of the world.

P. 10. 1. about the year 400 in a Carthaginian Council. The fourth
Council of Carthage met in 398. See Hallam's Middle Ages, iii. 273, ed.
1856; Student's ed. p. 510.
 AREOPAGITICA. [P. 10.

4. scrup'ld more the books, &c. This is a common construction in Elizabethan English; thus 'she wander'ld many a wood' (Spenser), 'roam'd the utmost isles' (Paradise Lost), 'walk'd the waves' (Lycidas), 'smile you my speeches' (King Lear), 'I cannot too much muse such shapes' (Tempest), &c.


8. furder. In the case of murder and murther, the d form has been retained. The A.-S. form is furchor, where f = dh, the th of thine. Comp. A.-S. fæder with father, mæder with mother.

9. lay by = lay aside, put on one side, i.e. not to read.

10. Padre Paolo = the monastic name of Pietro Sarpi, born at Venice 1552, died 1623. Drawn from his cell—he was a monk of the Servite order—into public life, he became the champion of Venice in its resistance to papal supremacy over its secular government. Of his subsequent years, which were spent mainly in his monastery, the great work was his History of the Council of Trent, 'faithfully translated into English by Nathanael Brent,' 1620. See a short life of him by Dr. Johnson, Works, ii. 109-11, ed. 1862. For the passage of the work referred to in the text, see the 1620 ed., book vi. pp. 471-6, where the discussion at the council as to the Index Expurgatorius is introduced by a 'Discourse of the Author concerning the Prohibition of Books.' It has been pointed out by Mr. Osborn in his edition of the Areopagitica that this 'Discourse' would seem to have been in Milton's mind at the time he wrote the Areopagitica, as several of the facts it quotes are also quoted by him in the same connection. The paragraph that immediately illustrates the present text is this: 'After the year 800 the Popes of Rome, as they assumed a great part of the politick government, so they caused the Books, whose authors they did condemn, to be burned, and forbade the reading of them.'

the great unmasker, &c. Cp. the inscription placed under a portrait of Father Paul by Sir Henry Wotton: 'Concilii Tridentini Eviscerator.' See Holt White. In Of Reformation in England, p. 13 of Works, Milton calls him 'the great Venetian antagonist of the Pope;' also 'the great and learned Padre Paolo.'

the Trentine Council, which first met Dec. 13, 1545, was finally dissolved Dec. 4, 1563. [Where is Trent?]

11. after which time, &c. On the growth of the power of the Popes in the ninth and tenth centuries, see Milman's Latin Christianity, vols. iii and iv. This growth was not without interruptions. It reached its greatest height in the eleventh and twelfth centuries. For the immediate illustration of the text, see, for instance, Milman's account of Pope Nicholas I (858-867).

the Popes of Rome. The title Pope was originally given to all bishops. It was confined to the prelates of Rome by the order of Phocas, Emperor of the East, at the instance of Boniface III, 606 A.D.

engrossing. Engross = to buy in large quantities of corn, or of anything.
Cp. *engrosser* = *grocer*, which means properly one who buys in large quantities. See Promp. Parv. s. v. *grocer*, where Way quotes from 37 Edw. III. 1363, respecting ‘merchauntz nomez grossers,’ so called because they ‘Engrossent totes manes des marchandises vendables.’ As such large purchases were commonly made with a view to raising the price of the commodity, the word *engross* came to have a bad meaning. (Cp. *forestalling*, *regrating*, *badgering.*) See Blackstone and Craik’s History of British Commerce, i. 133–135.

15. *fansied*. This spelling comes nearer to the original *phantasy*, *farrada*, of which *fancy* is a contracted form.

17. *Martin the 5* (Otto Colonna) was Pope 1417–1431. See Milman.

*Bull. Bulla*, meaning in classical Latin a round boss-like object, and especially the ornamental boss worn round the necks by Roman boys, came in the Middle Ages to be used specially of the waxen (originally leaden) seal attached by a band to legal instruments, and then of the instrument itself.

18. [What is meant by *excommunicated the reading*? Explain the word *excommunicated*.]

19. *Wicklief*, born circ. 1324, died Dec. 31, 1384. See Milman, viii. c. 6; Lebas’ Life of *Wyclif*; Shirley’s Catalogue of the Original Works of John Wyclif, T. Arnold’s *Wyclif’s Eng. Works*, &c. See Of Reformation in England: ‘Although indeed our Wickliffe’s preaching, at which all the succeeding reformers more effectually lighted their tapers, was to his countrymen but a short blaze, soon damped and stifled by the Pope and prelates for six or seven kings’ reigns,’ &c.

*Huss*, born circ. 1376, burnt at the stake July 7, 1415. See Milman.

22. *Leo the 10* (John de Medici) was Pope from 1513–1521. See Roscoe’s Life and Pontificate of Leo the Tenth.

24. *perfeted*. So ‘perfet’ in Lycidas, ed. 1637. It is the Fr. *parfait*.

25. *expurgating Indexes*. The Index Expurgatorius, first made by the Inquisitors in Italy, was approved by the Council of Trent in 1559. See Sarpi, p. 476, ed. 1620.

29. *in a prohibition*. There was, and is, an Index Librorum Prohibitorum as well as an Index Expurgatorius.

30. *Purgatory*. On the growth of this belief, see Milman, ix. c. 2.

[What is meant by *strait* here? Explain the word.]

31. *encroachment*. The root is *croce*: ‘mot d’origine germanique (néerlandais *krok*, *croc*). D. *crochet*, *crochu*, *croché*, *accrocher*, *décrocher*.’ (Brachet.) The radical meaning therefore is ‘a hooking on to,’ ‘a seizing with a hook,’ *cp*. *Piers the Plowman*, Text B. viii. 95, ed. Skeat; whence generally ‘a seizing;’ so that the verb ought to be used with a direct object. And so it is in older English; see Richardson’s Dictionary. Thus Bale in his Pageant of Popes speaks of ‘the monks who had *encroached their places*;’ Drayton in his Barons’ Wars of

‘their unbridled rage
That did our ancient liberty encroach.’

G 2
'To encroach upon' is then an inaccurate phrase; probably formed by a false analogy from 'to trespass on,' &c.

P. 11. 3. *glutton* Friers. The epithet is somewhat truculent. See *Pierce the Ploughman's Crede*, l. 67, ed. Skeat.

*glutton* = Fr. *glouton*, Lat. *glutus*.

7. *Vicar* means literally one who acts in place of another, a delegate; cp. *vicarious*, *vicerey*, *vicegerent*, &c. With the use here cp. our Eng. 'vicar-general' = 'an officer having powers from the chancellor of a diocese.'

8. *athwart* = across, at variance with (the Ital. has 'contro'); etymologically = *on-thwart*, on-cross, cross-wise. Cp. *a* in *across*, *ashore*, *aloft*, *aboard*, &c. (The prefix *a* has no less than twelve different meanings. See Morris and Skeat's *Specimens of Early Eng.* Part II, 2nd ed. p. xxxv.)

9. [What is the proper meaning of the word *Catholic*?]

*manners* = Lat. *mores*. So 1 Cor. xv. 33; cp. Goldsmith's *Traveller*, 127, &c.


13. *Davanzati*. Bernardo Davanzati Bostichi, of Florence, born 1529, died 1606. He wrote several works, Scisma d'Inghilterra, La coltivazione toscana, &c.; see Brunet's *Manuel du Libraire*. For some account of his translation of Tacitus, said to have been 'accomplished in fewer words than the original,' see Hallam's *Literature of Europe*, ii. 402. The book referred to in the text was his Scisma d'Inghilterra con altre operette, printed at Florence in 1638. On the last page of the original edition, after the Errata, may be seen the passages here translated. The book may have been published during Milton's stay at Florence. Obviously the subject would attract his notice.

15. *It may be printed. 'Si puo stampare.' In the original this *Imprimatur* is signed also by 'Alessandro Vettori Senatore Auditor di S. A. S.'

19. *broke prison*. The full phrase occurs in Midsummer Night's Dream, i. 2. 36: 'break the locks of prison gates.'

*exorcism*, *ἐξορπισμός* = an administering an oath to—a 'swearing'—anyone, a binding by oath. The common modern sense of the word was acquired in Ecclesiastical Greek.

23. [What is the grammatical construction of the *Roman stamp*?]


*complementing*. The word coupled with this word—*ducking*—would seem to show that our *complimenting* is here meant. But some sort of word-play may be intended. In derivation *complement* and *compliment* are not akin, the former being ultimately connected with *compleo*, the latter with *complico*.

*ducking*. See Comus, 960–2:

'Here be without *duck* or nod,
Other trippings to be trod
Of lighter toes,' &c.
NOTES.

Richard III, i. 3. 49:
‘Duck with French nods and apish courtesy.’

King Lear, ii. 2. 109:
‘twenty silly ducking observants
That stretch their duties nicely.’

Todd on Comus, l. c., quotes from Brathwaite’s English Gentleman (p. 324, ed. 1641): ‘a scrud face, an artfull cringe, or an Italianate duck.’ Duck means originally to bow, stoop, &c. Cp. Germ. ducken, and also tauchen. The duck is the head-stooping, the dipping bird; cp. Germ. taucher.

2. with their shav’n reverences, i.e. with their tonsured heads making signs of reverence. The language is somewhat pleonastic. Observe the boldness of the personification.

4. the sponge. Par. Reg. iv. 329, where see Mr. Jerram’s note. So ‘spunged out,’ Hooker’s Eccles. Pol., v. 19, &c. See Suetonius’ life of Augustus, where the emperor tells those who made enquiries after a play he had begun to write, ‘Ajacem suum in spongiam incubuisse.’ Quite different in derivation, though similar in meaning, is expunge.

5. responsories is a secondary substantive formed from responses. Jeremy Taylor speaks of ‘that responsory in the Roman breviary,’ &c. (Rule of Conscience, iii. 3. 6); see Richardson.

antiphonies. The word anthem is a corruption of Eccl. Lat. antiphōna, = Gk. ἀντιφωνον. The A.-S. form was antefne, which became anthemne (cf. woman from wifman, Lammas from Hlaðmasse); whence anthem (cf. Anthony, &c.).

8. one from Lambeth house, &c. ‘Pursuant to the decree of the Star Chamber in 1637 concerning the Press, all books of Divinity, Physic, Philosophy and Poetry were licensed either by the Archbishop of Canterbury, or the Bishop of London, or by substitutes of their appointment. This document is in Rushworth, Hist. Coll. iii. 306, Appendix; and is reprinted in the Memoirs of Thomas Hollis, p. 641.’ (Holt White.)

Lambeth house, the residence of the Archbishops of Canterbury, ‘from at least the thirteenth century.’ (Cunningham.)


12. would cast no ink. Cp. the Americanism ‘to sling ink.’

13. no vulgar tongue. So all modern languages were called in contradistinction to Latin, the language of the learned.

14. the pure conceit of an Imprimatur. Cp. ‘lordly Imprimatur’ just above; and in The Remonstrant’s Defence: ‘your proud Imprimaturs not to be obtained without the shallow surview, but not shallow hand of some mercenary, narrow-souled, and illiterate chaplain.’

conceit =idea, notion, thought. So commonly in Eliz. Eng., as M. of Ven. i. i. 92, &c.
18. *dictatorial*. We should say *dictatorial*. So 'professory learning' in Bacon's *Adv. of Learning*, p. 79, Clar. Press Ed.

*Parse English here.*

19. *ript up* = torn open and investigated, exposed. So Faerie Queene, i. 7. 39:

'Such helplesse harms long better hidden keep.
Then *ript up* griefe, where it may not availe.'

See other instances from Jewell, Hackluyt, North, &c., *apud* Richardson.

21. [What is the grammatical construction of *that can be heard of*?]

23. *ancestors* is ultimately a corruption of *anteceessores* = fore-goers, through the French.

28. *birth* is here used in a concrete sense; so *partus* in Latin, &c. So Paradise Lost, v. 180:

'Air and ye elements, the eldest *birth*
Of nature's womb,' &c.

Tennyson's Godiva:

'Not only we, the latest *birth* of time,' &c.

*no envious Juno,* &c. See the story of Hercules' birth. When in her travail Alcmena cried out for Illithya, Illithya came, but not to succour, for Hera had pledged her to retard. She sat cross-legged at the door, muttering spells. One of Alcmena's maidens, seeing her obstructiveness, deceived her by pretending that the mother's pains were over; whereupon startled she changed her posture, and then at once Hercules was born. See Alcmena's own account of this wrong, and how it was outwitted, and how the goddess avenged herself, in Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, ix. 281–323; especially 297–301:

'Utque meos audit gemitus, subsedit in illa
Ante fores ara; dextroque in poplitea laevum
Pressa genu, digitis inter se pectine conjunctis,
Sustinuit nixus. Tacita quoque carmina voce
Dixit, et inceptos tenuerunt carmina nixus.'


Mr. Lobb aptly quotes Browne's Vulgar Errors, v. 23. 9: 'To sit cross-legged, or with our fingers pectinated or shut together, is accounted bad, and friends will persuade us from it. The same conceit religiously possessed the ancients, as is observable from Pliny: "poplites alterius genus imponere nefas olim;" and also from Athenaeus that it was an old neficious practice, and Juno is made in this posture to hinder the delivery of Alcmena,' &c. See Le Bas' Life of Archbishop Laud, p. 38, ed. 1836: 'His [Laud's] old detractor Archbishop Abbot had been constantly on the spot, *sitting cross-legged* (if the phrase may be allowed) upon the fortunes of the *Papist*, and providing him with abundant opportunities of showing how well he could endure the pains of hope deferred, which maketh the heart sick.' Also Pecle's


33. [in worse condition, &c. How so?] *should be to stand*, &c. We could say 'it was to stand,' &c. Comp.

*wa. VI, II. iii. 28.
NOTES.

13. i. *ers it be borne to the world.* The belief in our antenatal existence was held by Plato and others. See e.g. the passage in Plato's Republic, p. 618, of yet unbodied souls choosing the lives they will lead: σφης οὖν, ἑκείη οὐκ ἀπεκαθα, οὖν δέαν ἱεῖα πρὸς τὴν Λάξεως, κ. τ. λ.

2. *yet in darkness,* that is, while still in darkness. See p. 3, l. 33.

*Radamanth* was one of the three great Justices of Hades, according to Greek myths. His colleagues were Minos and Aiakos. See the Latin poets, *passim,* as Vergil, Aeneid, vi. 565:

> Ἐνῶς ἡσαρ Ῥηδάμανθος ἵππυ, ὑπέργειν τικότα,  
> Καστηγάτης αὐτήδες δόλος, συμβίγαις δανεῖ,  
> Qvas quis apud superos, furto laetatus inani,  
> Distult in serm comissas piacul mortem.*

3. *the ferry.* See Aeneid, vi. 295–330, &c.; Richard III, i. 4. 46–8:

> 'Who pass'd methought the melancholy flood,  
> With that grim ferryman which poets write of,  
> Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.'

4. *that mysterious iniquity.* See Revelation xvii. 5, of the woman 'arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls:' 'Upon her forehead was a name written, *Mystery,* Babylon the great, the mother of harlots and abominations of the earth,' &c. The Church reformers of the sixteenth century confidently identified this woman with the Papacy.

6. *limbo's.* In classical Latin *limbus*—a border, a fringe, &c.; as in Vergil, Aeneid, iv. 137. In the Middle Ages it was used to denote a border land of hell, the infernal 'marches.' 'The old schoolman supposed there to be, besides hell (infernum damnatorum), 1. a *limbus purorum,* where the souls of infants unbaptized remained [cp. Vergil's "limen primum" of Hades, Aeneid, vi. 426–433]; 2. a *limbus parum,* where the fathers of the church, saints, and martyrs awaited the general resurrection; [see De Doctrina Christiana, chap. xiii, and Apology for Scepticknuus, &c.]; and 3. Purgatory. To which in popular opinion was added, 4. a *limbus fatorum,* or fool's paradise, the receptacle of all vanity and nonsense.' (Nares.) See Dante's Inferno, iv, where the poet enters Limbo, the first circle of Hell, and his guide explains that it is the region of such as himself, who 'before the Gospel lived.' (Cary.) See especially Paradise Lost, iii. 440–497, for sense No. 4. (Milton contradicts those who placed that paradise in the moon, as e.g. Ariosto, Orlando Furioso, xxxiv. 70, &c., whom Pope follows in the Rape of the Lock, canto v.) Commonly limbo was used for hell itself; so Shakspere, All's well that ends well, v. 3. 256: 'for indeed he was mad for her, and talked of Satan and of Limbo, and of Furies, and I know not what.' Faerie Queene, i. 2. 32:

> 'What voice of damned ghost from *limbo* lake?'

In the Comedy of Errors, iv. 2. 32, where Dromio of Syracuse describes his master who had just been arrested as

> 'in Tartar *limbo,* worse than hell.  
> A devil in an everlasting garment hath him;'


the ‘border’ is more fearful than the ‘land’ itself. In Henry VIII, v. 3. 67, 
limbo Patrum = prison.

9. ilfully = unhandsomely, fously. Favour in Elizabethan English 
frequently = face, feature, ‘looks,’ thus Bacon’s Essays, 43: ‘In beauty, 
that of favour is more then that of colour, and that of decent and gracious 
motion more then that of favour,’ &c. See Eastwood and Wright’s Bible 
Word Book. As Craik suggests in his English of Shakespeare, favour came to 
mean countenance by the same ‘natural transference of meaning’ as 
countenance came to mean favour; (cp. ‘the light of thy countenance,’ Psalm xlv. 
3, &c.), i.e. favour is used for that which expresses favour = the 
countenance.

10. inquisitor — turio in Latin, whence the participle - turient, denotes 
a yearning or desire; thus esurio = I desire to eat, I hunger. These 
desiderative verbs are formed from the ‘participle in rus;’ thus esurio comes 
from esurus (stem ed-). scripturio from scripturus, &c. So petiturio (to 
long) to be a candidate, Cicero, Ad Atticum, i. 14), parturitio, empturio, 
Sullaturio, proscripturio (‘ita Sullaturit animus ejus et proscripturii,’ 
Cicero, Ad Att., 1x. i 0. 6). See Donaldson’s Varronianus, p. 421; Key’s 
Latin Grammar, pp. 135 and 136.

minorites, i.e. quasi minorites or friars. Cp. above, p. 11: ‘Under the 
hands of two or three glutton Friars.’ Strictly the Minorites were the 
Franciscan, or Grey Friars. See Milman’s Latin Christianity, vi. 34: 
‘The very name of his [St. Francis’] disciples, the Friar Minors, implied 
their humility.’

11. [What is meant by these most certain authors?]
18. for all that. This phrase is probably elliptical; fully, we should say 
‘for all that can do,’ or ‘for all that weighs,’ or ‘for all that can be 
said on that head,’ &c. See note on ‘for all the morning light’ in Longer 

20. light ou = to drop upon by accident, to find without effort. Slightly 
different is the sense in the Te Deum: ‘O Lord, let thy mercy lighten 
upon us,’ &c. This light is the A.S. lihtan. Alight, of which the sense is not 
quite the same, is a compound.

23. [to no other purpose. What preposition should we rather use?]
‘Nor am I in the list of them that hope.’

[What is the force of of here?] Macb. i. 3. 80.
26. alchemy, here distributively for a process or achievement of alchemy. 
For the derivation of the word, the al- is the Arabic ‘article’ (so the al-
in al-cohol, al-gebra, al-coyce, al-cembic, al-Cairo, al-Koran, al-kali, perhaps in 
al-batross, the el in el-ixir); -chemy is probably ultimately from the Gr. χυμός, 
juice, &c. In derivation then, alchemy = chemistry; and in respect of what 
the two words denote, they are related to each other very much as are 
astrology and astronomy. The classical pieces of English literature that deal with 
alchemy are Chaucer’s Canon’s Yeoman’s Tale, and Ben Jonson’s Alchemist.
Lullius—Raymond Lully, a famous writer on medicine and chemistry, and on other subjects, of the latter part of the thirteenth century and the early fourteenth; born at Palma in Majorca in 1234, stoned to death in Mauretania in 1315 by the Mohammedans, whom he had zealously visited Africa to convert. See Bacon’s Advancement of Learning, p. 176, ed. Aldis Wright. On his missionary ardour, and what came of it, see Maclear’s History of Christian Missions in the Middle Ages, chap. xvi.

27. sublimat = extract. Technically ‘to raise by the force of chemical fire.’

30. [for the tree, &c. What is the meaning of for here?]

32. He now passes on to his Second Point, see p. 67.

P. 14. 3. Moses. See Acts vii. 22: ‘And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and deeds.’

3. Daniel. See Daniel i. 17: ‘As for these four children [Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah—Belteshazzar, Shadrach, Meshach, Abednego] God gave them knowledge and skill in all learning and wisdom; and Daniel had understanding in all visions and dreams.’

4. Paul. It may perhaps be doubted whether St. Paul’s Greek learning was so very extensive.

6. in Paul = in the case of Paul; so often in in Latin.

8. the sentences of three Greek Poets. See Acts xvii. 28 (from Aratos, or possibly Cleanthes); 1 Cor. xv. 33; Titus i. 12 (from Epimenides). Cp. Sidney’s Apol. for Poetrie, p. 58, ed. Arber.

the sentences = sententiae, γραμματικά.

9. one of them a Tragedian, i.e. Euripides. See Milton’s Preface to Samson Agonistes, p. 204, vol. ii, Clar. Press Ed.: ‘The Apostle Paul himself thought it not unworthy to insert a verse of Euripides into the text of Holy Scripture, 1 Cor. xv. 33.’ This line,

φθείρων γῆν χρυσή δυμηλα κακάτ,

is ascribed to Euripides by Sokrates in his Ecclesiastical History, iii. 16. Jerome and Grotius assign it to the Thais of Menander; see Newton’s and also Todd’s note to Samson Agonistes, Preface. Clemens Alexandrinus (Paidagogos, ii. 6. § 50) says indefinitely: ἡ ποιητικὴ λέγει; see Dindorf’s Poetae Scenici, Euripides, Fragments, 962. That there should be any confusion is intelligible enough, if it is remembered how Menander was in fact the dramatic offspring of Euripides, and much resembled him in style.

11. odds. The first notion of the subst. odd seems to be a point, or something projecting (Norse oddr, &c.); hence it means what is eminent or singular in any way, &c. Here odds = advantage, superiority. So Arcades, 23:

‘Juno dares not give her odds.’

See Shakspere, passim, as Winter’s Tale, v. i. 207; Henry V, iv. 3. 5, &c.

The adj. odd seems to be of different origin from the Welsh od, notable.

the Apostat. See Smith’s Milman’s Gibbon, iii. 136: ‘The independent
spirit of Julian refused to yield the passive and unresisting obedience which
was required, in the name of religion, by the haughty ministers of the
church. . . He was educated in the Lesser Asia amidst the scandals of the
Arian controversy. . . As soon as Gallus was invested with the honours of the
purple, Julian was permitted to breathe the air of freedom, of literature,
and of Paganism,’ &c. Voltaire (Philosophical Dictionary, s. v. Apostate)
says it is a question whether he was ever truly a Christian. Julian himself
assures the Alexandrines he was so. See Mr. Lobb’s note.

14. a decree, &c. See Smith’s Milman’s Gibbon, iii. 163. It prohibited
the Christians from teaching the arts of grammar and rhetoric. See it
among the Epistles of Julian (xlii). ‘The Christians were directly forbid to
teach, they were indirectly forbid to learn; since they would not frequent
the schools of the Pagans.’ (Gibbon, l. c. note.) See Bacon’s Advancement
of Learning, p. 49, ed. Aldis Wright: ‘So again we find that many of
the ancient bishops and fathers of the church were excellently read and
studied in all the learning of the heathen; insomuch that the edict of the
Emperor Julianus (whereby it was interdicted unto Christians to be admitted
into Schools, lectures, or exercises of learning) was esteemed and accounted
a more pernicious engine and machination against the Christian faith than
were all the sanguinary prosecutions of his predecessors.’

for, said he, &c. ‘He vainly contends that, if they refuse to adore
the gods of Homer and Demosthenes, they ought to content themselves with
expounding Luke and Matthew in the churches of the Galileans.’ (Gibbon,
l. c.)

18. shifts. The radical notion of the word shift is division, change, &c.;
or the A.-S. sceftan is cognate with Icel. skífa, ultimately with shed (in
water-shed), σχίζω, scindo, &c.; and in this radical sense the verb is still com-
mon enough. Then it came to mean a change of plan, a ready device, &c.
See Titus Andronicus, iv. 2. 176:

‘For it is you that puts us to our shifts.’
Cp. the Gr. παροίκος γίγνεσθαι, as Herodotus, ix. 109; so παροικια
πάροικος γίγνεσθαι, Plato, Republic, 398 A.

[19. in danger to decline. What construction should we rather use?]

22. the two Apollinarii = Apollinarios of Alexandria and his son the Bishop
of Alexandria. The Christians, says Gibbon, in a note to the passage of the
text describing Julian’s oppressions, ‘had recourse to the expedient of com-
posing books for their own schools. Within a few months Apollinaris
produced his Christian imitations of Homer (a sacred history in twenty-four
books), Pindar, Euripides, and Menander; and Sozomen is satisfied that they
equalled or excelled the originals.’ Apollinaris is the Latin, Apollinarios the
Greek form of the name.

20. fain is the A.-S. fægen, joyful. Cp. hail and hægel, mail and nægel,
stile and stigel, &c.

21. the seven liberal sciences = the ‘trivium’ and ‘quadrivium.’
NOTES.

* Gramm. loquitur; Dia. vera docet; Rhet. verba colorat;
Mus. canit; Ar. numerat; Geo. ponderat; Ast. colit astra."

See Hallam's Lit. of Europe, i. 4 n. ed. 1837.
24. the Historian Socrates. See his Ecclesiastical History, iii. 16. This Sokrates 'flourished' in the fifth century. His Church History was a continuation of that of Eusebius down to 440 A.D.
26. by taking away, &c. Julian died in 363. Jovian, who was elected to succeed him, proclaimed universal toleration. 'Under his reign Christianity obtained an easy and lasting victory.' (Gibbon.)
30. decaying. Observe the causative use of decay here. So Surrey, The Constant Lover Lamenteth:

'And now though on the sunne I drive
Whose fervent flame all things decayes,' &c.

(apud Richardson). The verb is properly neuter, derived ultimately from the Lat. decedere. Cp. the causative uses of the 2nd aorist of λανθάνω and λαγχάνω. Perhaps the verb in the text should be taken as a mere verbalising of the noun, as is common in Elizabethan English; =afflict with decay, &c. Cp. e.g. 'smile you my speeches?' in King Lear, ii. 2. 88.

31. Decius was emperor from 249 to 251. See Milman's History of Christianity, vol. ii.

Dioclesian. Emperor 284–305.
32. St. Jerom. Born circ. 345, died 420. His Life has been written by Erasmus, Stigelius, Siguenza, Martianay, Collombet (Hole's Biographical Dictionary); see Milman's Christianity, iii. 190–237. The Vulgate translation of the Bible is commonly attributed to him.

that the Divell, &c. See Jerome's Epistolae, 18, 'Ad Eustochium de Virginit.' Epistle xxii. in Migne's Patrologiae Cursus Completus; see vol. i. of Hieronymi Opera, pp. 394–425. The letter was written in 384. In a dream he thought himself brought before the tribunal of Heaven; and when, in answer to the question of what profession he was, he said he was a Christian, 'Thou liest,' cried the judge; 'thou art a Ciceronian, for the works of that author possess thy heart;' and thereupon condemned him to be severely scourged by angels. See Butler's Lives of the Saints; also Sarpi's Council of Trent, p. 472, ed. 1620.

33. in a lenten dream. It was dreamed by him when seized by a fever one Lent. See the letter to the nun Eustochium: 'Dum ita me antiquus serpens [al. hostis] illuderet [he could not give up his old library], in media ferme Quadragesima medullis infusa febris corpus invastat exhaustum et sine ulla requie (quod dictu quoque incredibile est) sic infelicia membra depasta est ut ossibus vix haererem,' &c.

P. 15. r. seis'd = possessed, as still in law language. Seize is from the Fr. saisir, which is from the Low Lat. sacire, which is from the O. H. G. sazjan, H. G. besetzen. See Brachet.
3. Ciceronianisms. On the Ciceronianism of the Renaissance, see
Hallam's Literature of Europe, i. chap. 5, and the chapter in Encyclopaedia Metropolitana, 'History of Roman Literature,' pp. 321–325.

[4. Explain the reading, not the vanity.]

6. not for scurrill Plautus, &c. See the Epistle ad Eustochium: 'Itaque miser ego lecturus Tullium jejunabam. Post noctium crebras vigilias, post lacrymas, quas mihi praeteritorum recordatio peccatorum ex imis visceribus eruebat, Plautus sumebatur in manus.'

scurrill. Milton seems to have used this form to avoid the occurrence of the same sound at the end of two contiguous words. To his ear such a recurrence as Scurrillous Plautus would be offensive. See his ridicule of Bishop Hall's 'teach each':

'Teach each hollow grove to sound his love,
Wearying echo with one changeless word.'

pp. 91, 92 of Works. But scurrill is found elsewhere; e.g. in The Two Noble Kinsmen, v. i. 136, ed. Skeat.

8. so many more ancient Fathers. E.g. St. Augustine.


11. Margites ... writ by Homer. 'The Margites bears the same relation to comedy that the Iliad and Odyssey bear to tragedy.' (Aristotle, Poetics, chap. iv.) See Müller's Literature of Greece, &c. The ancients agreed in assigning its authorship to Homer, but without authority. One or two lines are preserved, as the well-known one:

πάλιν ἡπιστατο ἔργα, κακῶς δ᾽ ἡπιστατο πάντα.

See another in Aristotle, Ethics, vi. 7.

13. Morgante. The Morgante Maggiore of Luigi Pulci, printed at Venice in 1488. See Hallam's Literature of Europe, i. 270–273 and 421; Roscoe's Lorenzo de Medici; Sismondi's Literature of Southern Europe, &c.

'The Morgante is generally regarded as the prototype of the "Orlando Furioso" of Ariosto.' (Roscoe.) See a translation of the first book in Byron's works.

much to the same purpose. 'It has been a question among Italian critics whether the poem of Pulci is to be reckoned burlesque,' &c. (Hallam, l. c.)


ancienter. 'Ascham writes inventivest; Bacon honourablesst and ancienter; Fuller eminentest, eloquenter, learnedest, solemnest, famouesest, virtuouesest, with the comparative and superlative adverbs wiser, easiier, hardiester; Sidney even uses repiningest; Coleridge safeliesst.' (Marsh.) See also Morris' English Accidence, chap. xi.


19. had wont = had accustomed himself = the more usual was wont.

[20. What is the force of avail here?]

21. conversant = well versed. See above p. 8, l. 6.

24. to give offence = to cause any one to stumble, to be a σκάνδαλον; as,
passim, in the New Testament, Authorised Version, e.g. Romans ix. 33; 1 Peter ii. 8, &c.


that of the Apostle, &c. See 1 Thessalonians v. 21.

32. prove = test. So Luke xiv. 19, &c. So the exception proves the rule.

P. 16. i. another remarkable saying. See Titus i. 15.

6. viands = victuals. Each word is derived from Lat. vivo. Sir Thomas More uses the singular (viande); see Richardson.

7. in that unapocryphall vision. See Acts x. 9–16.

11. naught = lit. of naught, good for nothing. See Shakspere, passim, as Merchant of Venice, v. 1. 91. So ‘naughty figs,’ Jeremiah xxiv. 2.


20. Selden was born 1584, died 1654. His life has been written by Wilkins (1726), Aikin (1773), and Johnson (1835). See also Hallam’s Literature of Europe, iii. 334, &c.; Constitutional History, &c. He was ‘now sitting in Parliament’ for Oxford University.

whose volume of natural and national laws, &c. = his De Jure Naturali et Gentium juxta Disciplinam Ebraeorum, published in 1640. See Hallam’s Literature of Europe, l. c. Hallam speaks of the ‘superb display of erudition, especially oriental,’ with which his work is illustrated, of his ‘unparalleled stores of erudition,’ &c. The words Milton particularly refers to are perhaps these on p. 2 of the 1641 edition of the work. He insists that men should collect all opinions, however discrepant with their own, and this ‘non sine causis certe gravissimis. Nam non sua modo socii auxiliaribus suffragiis haud parum firmant sed et insuper adversa refellendi, obscuriores qua suas dissidentesque sententias intermeant confiniorum ipsissimae lineae detegendi designandique... ansam commodius arripiunt.’ Milton again quotes the work in his Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce, speaking of it there as ‘that noble volume written by our learned Selden... a work more useful and more worthy to be perused by whosoever studies to be a great man in wisdom than all those decretales and sumless sums which the pontifical clerks have doted on.’

22. exquisite = carefully sought out, as in Latin; thus, ‘exquisitis rationibus confirmare,’ Cicero, De Finibus, i. 9. 30.

theorems. We commonly use ‘theory’ with this meaning; but strictly ‘theory’ is abstract, ‘theorem’ is concrete, as in Euclid. Cp. ‘telegraphy’ and ‘telegram,’ &c. We use ‘speculation’ in both senses.

[24. Explain collated.]

27. saving over the rules of temperance. See Paradise Lost, xi. 530–538:

‘There is, said Michael, if thou well observe
The rule of not too much, by temperance taught
In what thou eatest and drinkest, seeking from thence
Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,’ &c.
29. repasting. See Hamlet, iv. 5. 145–148:
'To his good friends thus wide I'll ope my arms;
And like the kind life-rendering pelican
Repast them with my blood.'

Pope's Homer, xxiv:
'And now they reach'd the naval walls, and found
The guards repasting, while the bowls go round.'

(aperu Richardson s. v.)

31. How great a vertue, &c. It was one of the four cardinal virtues.
(See Piers Plowman, Proli. 104, Clar. Press ed.)

P. 17. 2. demeanour=management. The ultimate stem of demean is the Lat. minare; see above p. 68.

[3. Explain tab'd here.]

4. Omer. See Exodus xvi. The omer is mentioned only in Exodus.
(The homer—a much larger measure—several times in the Bible, as Leviticus xxvii. 16, &c.) Its absolute value is given by Josephus as .8669 gall., by the Rabbinitis as .4428 gall. See Smith's Bible Dict.

7. which enter into a man, &c. See Matthew xv. 17–20; Mark vii. 14–23.

10. to be his own chooser. See Paradise Lost, iii. 97–99:
'Ingrate, he had of me
All he could have. I made him just and right,
Sufficient to have stood, through free to fall.'

14. that much reading, &c. See Ecclesiastes xii. 12.


[25. Explain practiz'd the books.]

31. those confused seeds, &c. See the story of Cupid and Psyche in The Golden Ass of Apuleius, books iv–vi. Psyche has fallen into the hands of Venus, who is wroth with her for having won the love of her son Cupid, and afflicts her grievously. She bids Anxiety and Sorrow scourge and torment her. After further abuse, Venus 'flew upon her, tore her clothes in a great many places, pulled out her hair, shook her by the head, and grievously maltreated her. Then taking wheat, barley, millet, poppy, vetches, lentils and beans, and mixing them altogether in one heap, she said to her:
"You seem to me, such an ugly slave as you now are, to be likely to gain lovers in no other way than by diligent drudgery. I will therefore myself, for once, make trial of your industrious habits. Take and separate this promiscuous mass of seeds, and having properly placed each grain in its place, and so sorted the whole, give me proof of your expedition by finishing the task before evening." Then having delivered over to her the vast heap of seeds, she at once took her departure for a nuptial banquet. But Psyche, astounded at the stupendous task, sat silent and stupefied, and did not move a hand to the confused and inextricable mass. Just then a tiny ant, one of
the inhabitants of the fields, became aware of this prodigious difficulty, and pitying the distress of the partner of the mighty god, and execrating the mother-in-law's cruelty, it ran busily about and summoned together the whole tribe of ants in the neighbourhood, crying to them, "Take pity on her, ye active children of the all-producing earth. Take pity, and make haste to help the wife of Love, a pretty damsel, who is now in a perilous situation." Immediately the six-footed people came rushing in whole waves, one upon another, and with the greatest diligence separated the whole heap, grain by grain. Then having assorted the various kinds into different heaps, they vanished forthwith. At night-fall Venus returned home from the nuptial banquet, exhilarated with wine, fragrant with balsams, and having her waist encircled with blooming roses. As soon as she saw with what marvellous expedition the task had been executed, "This is no work of your hands, wicked creature," she said, "but his whom you have charmed, to your sorrow and his," and throwing her a piece of coarse bread, she went to bed." (Bohn's Class. Lib., Apuleius, p. 116.)

P. 18. 1. sort asunder = arrange in sorts or classes.

2. from out the rinde, &c. See Genesis iii. 5, and 22; Paradise Lost, 780-1011.

5. that doom, &c. See Genesis ii. 16, 17.

11. Notice the emphasis given by the triple repetition of and yet.

12. the true warfaring Christian. In the edition of 1644 the reading is wayfaring. 'Baron,' says Holt White, 'who saw the quarto edition of the prose works through the press, unwarrantably changed "wayfaring" into "warfaring." There was no need of emendation—"wayfaring" is in opposition to "cloister'd." It is beside more consonant to Scripture, and therefore more likely to have come from Milton: "The wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein." Isaiah ch. 35. v. 8.' But (1) there is some warrant for the change, as I can show, whether Baron knew it or not; and (2) the change is certainly an improvement. The warrant is to be found in a copy of the Areopagitica presented by Milton himself to one Thomason ('ex dono Authoris' is written in Thomason's hand on the title-page), now preserved in the British Museum (Press-mark 182 E 18), where the 'y' is crossed out and 'r' written above, credibly by the author himself. See The Athenæum for Oct. 11, 1873. That the change is an improvement the context, I think, makes clear. Wayfaring is not an adequate word for the occasion. It does not imply such activity and resistance as the context demands. More than mere movement must be expressed. It is of the Christian militant and struggling that Milton speaks. Cp. Bishop Hall's Contemplations, Gideon's Preparation and Victory: 'How many make a glorious show in the warfaring church which when they shall see danger of persecution shall shrink from the standard of God?' Hooker also has the word, Ecclesiastical Polity, viii; see Richardson.

13. I cannot praise, &c. Cp. what Cicero says of oratory, De Oratore, i. 34. 157: 'Educenda deinde dictio est ex hac domestica exercitatione et
umbratili medium in agmen, in pulverem, in clamorem, in castra atque aciem forensem.'

16. *that immortal garland.* That = that famous; so Lat. *ille,* as Cicero, de Oratore, ii. 14. 58: 'Xenophon, Sokraticus ille,' &c.; and Greek *ευείως,* as Homer, Iliad, xxiv. 90:

*Tìmē με κεῖνος ἀναγε μήγας θεός;*

*not without dust and heat.* Compare Horace, Ad Pisones, 412-413:

'Qui cupit optatam cursu contingere metam,
Multa tuit fecitque puer, sudavit et alit.'

23. *a blank vertue = a colourless, neutral, ineffectual thing.*

24. *but an excrementall whiteness = is but superficial, not essential, only 'skin-deep.'* (Mr. Lobb.) A mere outgrowth. *Excrement = excrecence =* an outgrowth. See Comedy of Errors, ii. 2. 79: 'Why is Time such a niggard of hair, being, as it is, so plentiful an *excrement?* ' &c. So 'my pedlar's *excrement* (= my pedlar's beard) in Winter's Tale, iv. 4. 733. See Nares' Glossary.

25. *our sage and serious Poet Spencer,* &c. Milton told Dryden that Spenser was his 'original.' (See Dryden's Fables, Preface.) Without any such confession, it would have been evident from Milton's earlier works how great was the influence of Spenser over his youthful mind. To say nothing of numerous Spenserian echoes that may be detected, it is to the Faerie Queene that he especially alludes in Il Penseroso after his mention of the Squire's Tale of Chaucer:

'If aught else great bards beside
In sage and solemn tunes have sung
Of turneys and of trophies hung,
Of forests and enchantments drear,
Where more is meant than meets the ear.'

He quotes at length from the fifth book of the Shepherd's Calendar in his Animadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence, &c.: 'Let the novice learn first to renounce the world, and so give himself to God, and not therefore give himself to God that he may close the better with the world, like that false Palinode in the Eclogue of May, under whom the poet lively personates our prelates, whose whole life is a recantation of their pastoral vow, and whose profession to forsake the world, as they use the matter, bogs them deeper into the world. Those our admired Spenser inveighs against, not without some presage of these reforming times:

'The time was once and may again return
(For oft may happen that hath been deform'), &c.

26. *a better teacher,* &c. Cp. Horace, Epistles, i. 2. 3, 4, of Homer

'Quo quid sit pulchrum, quid turpe, quid utile, quid non,
Planius ac melius Chrysippo et Crantore dicit.'

*Scots* = John Duns Scotus, the famous schoolman, whose second name has so unfairly acquired the sense of dullard, born circ. 1265, died at Cologne
1308. Be sure not to confound him, as is sometimes done, with Johannes Scotus Erigena of the ninth century.

27. Aquinas. 'The Angelic Doctor,' the 'Angel of the Schools,' born circ. 1224, died 1274. On certain radical questions of thought his views were exactly opposed to those presently urged by Scotus. See Butler's Hudibras, i. 151, ed. Zachary Grey:

'In school divinity as able
As he that hight Irrefragable;
A second Thomas, or at once,
To name them all, another Dunce;
Profound in all the nominal
And real ways, beyond them all;
For he a rope of sand could twist
As tough as learned Sorbonist;
And weave fine cobwebs fit for skull
That's empty when the moon is full;
Such as take lodgings in a head
That's to be let unfurnished.'

28. Guion. See Faerie Queene, ii.

with his palmer. The Palmer was not with him in the Cave of Mammon; see ii. 8. 3. For a description of the Palmer see ii. 1. 7.

29. the Cave of Mammon. See ii. 7. 26–66.

the Bower of Earthly Bliss. See ii. 12.

P. 19. 2. scout is from Old Fr. escouter = Lat. auscultare. Paradise Lost, ii. 131:

'Oft on the bordering Deep
Encamp their legions, or with obscure wing
Scout far and wide into the realm of night
Scorning surprise.'

For the noun see Paradise Lost, iii. 543–554. In Comus 138 the Morning is described as 'the babbling eastern scout.' Scout, to reject with disdain, is a quite different word.

4. tractat. The Latin word is 'Classical' in this sense, as Pliny, xiv. 4. 5: 'Separatim toto tractatu sententia ejus judicanda est.' Our tract is a mere abbreviation of tractate. Treatise comes from the same stem through the French.

10. [for that oftimes, &c. Illustrate what is said here.]

11. not nicely = in a plain-spoken way, without mincing. See what is said of God's 'tart rhetoric' in An Apology for Smectymnuus. On nice, see Mr. Jerram's note to Par. Reg. iv. 157.

12. not unelegantly, i.e. elaborately.

it brings in holiest men, &c. See the book of Job.

19. Talmudest. On the Babylonian Talmud see Milman's History of the Jews, iii. 4–6. On both Talmuds—the 'Gemara' of Jerusalem, as well as that of Babylon—see Smith's Bible Dict., s. v. Talmud. See also Literary Remains of Emanuel Deutsch. The name means 'doctrine.'
what ails, &c. 'What is the matter with, or the character of the modesty of his marginal readings?' &c. So The Judgment of Martin Bucer concerning Divorce: 'But when I was told that the style (which what it ails to be so soon distinguishable I cannot tell),' &c.

17. his marginal! Keri, &c. The language of the text (Cheziv, or cethib =written), when it seemed too strong or plain, was glossed in the margin, (Keri =read); see An Apology for Smectymnuus, where is discussed the out-spoken phraseology of Scripture. (Works, p. 84.) Are we to believe 'that Jonathan or Onkelos the targumists were of cleaner language than he that made the tongue?' Mentioning a special case, and remonstrating against any enfeebling substitution, he continues: 'Whereas God, who is the author both of purity and eloquence, chose this phrase as fittest in that vehement character wherein he spake. Otherwise that plain word might easily have been forborn; which the masoreths and rabbinical scholiasts, not well attending, have often used to blur the margent with Keri instead of Ketiv, and gave us this insulse rule out of their Talmud, “That all words which in the law are written obscenely, must be changed to more civil words;” fools who would teach men to read more decently than God thought good to write. And thus I take it to be manifest, that indignation against men and their actions notoriously bad hath leave and authority oftentimes to utter such words and phrases, as in common talk were not mannerly to use. That ye may know, not only as the historian speaks, “that all those things for which men plough, build, or sail, obey virtue,” but that all words, and whatsoever may be spoken, shall at some time in an unwonted manner wait upon her purposes.’ Holt White quotes also Defensio Secunda: ‘Non Prophetarum scripta tuam turpiciuli immo nonnumquam plane obscaeni censuram effugerint, quoties Masorethis et Rabinis pro eo quod diserte scriptum est suum libet Keri adscribere. Ad me quod attinet fateor malle me cum sacris scriptoribus εἰδουρρήμωνα quam cum futilibus Rabinis εἰσχίμωνα esse.’

22. Clement of Alexandria. See Mosheim, i. 52, Of the Second Century. His Hortatory Address to the Greeks (Αγον προτεστικον προς τοις Ἑλληνας) dealt with the impurities of polytheism.

Eusebius, born circ. 264 in Palestine, died circ. 340. Besides The Evangelical Preparation (Ευαγγελικής ἀνδεῖξις προπαρασκευή), the work here referred to, he wrote an Ecclesiastical History, Life of Constantine, The Chronicon, &c. See Mosheim.

[23. Explain transmitting our ears, &c.]

25. Irenæus, chosen bishop of Lyons in 177. All his works are lost except that against Heresies, which is preserved in a Latin version.

Epiphanius, chosen bishop of Salamis in Cyprus in 367. His work entitled Panarrium was written against all the heresies that were.

26. discover = uncover, display, exhibit, as Mer. of Ven. ii. 6. 7.

31. writ. This form of the preterite is probably due to the tendency to assimilate perfect and past-participial forms, assisted by the fact that the plural
form of certain verbs contained the vowel of the past-participle. Thus the
pl. pret. of write was written. See Morris and Skeat’s Specimens, vol. ii.
p. xxxiii. (The A.-S. pret. is wræt.) So in the sixteenth and seventeenth
centuries we find driv = drove, smit = smote, rid = rode, ris = rose; see
Morris’s English Accidence, p. 165.

P. 20. 3. criticisms = refinements, niceties, ‘elegantiae,’ &c.; the sins
which a critic accomplished in that line would select as choice and laudable.
So criticism here = not a judgment or sentence, but that which is selected by a
judgment. Cp. Tacitus’ ‘erudito luxu’ of Petronius, and the quotation in
the following note.

4. Petronius, died by ‘necessity’ in 66. See Tacitus, Annals, xvi. 18, 19:
‘Inter paucos familiarium Neroni adsumptus est, elegantiae arbiter, dum nihil
amoenum et molle adfluentia putat nisi quod ei Petronius adprobatisset.’
the Master of his Regels. This was an official title in Tudor England.
See Collier’s History of English Dramatic Poetry.

5. That notorious ribald of Aretzo = Aretino, 1492–1557. See Roscoe’s
Leo the Tenth, ii. 271–6: ‘The life of Aretino may be denominated the
triumph of effrontery.’ See Milton’s Commonplace Book, published by
the Camden Society.

ribald, Fr. ribaud, It. ribaldo, is derived ultimately from an old Germ.
word meaning a prostitute, with the suffix ald; see Diez’s Rom. Lexicon.
For the medieval use of the word Diez quotes from Matthew Paris: ‘fures,
exules, fugitivi, excommunicati, quos omnes ribaldos Francia vulgariter con-
suevit appellare.’

dreaded, &c. The pungency of his satires made him formidable to the
objects of them, as it also made them intensely popular with the general
reader. Sometimes he was bribed into silence; once or twice soundly flogged.

7. for posterities sake. This would seem to mean that some known de-
sendants of Skelton or of Wolsey were living when Milton wrote. Skelton
was of a Cumberland family; see Fuller’s Worthies, i. 346.

whom Harry the 8., &c. perhaps = Skelton of Diss in Norfolk. See note
on p. d. of Mr. Lobb’s Areopagitica. Diss was ‘in merriment’ identified
with Dis, the god of the infernal regions, and the god’s name used for those
regions themselves. It is perhaps scarcely worth noticing that
Skelton was Rector, not Vicar of Diss. Diss is often spelt with one s, as
by Fuller. Skelton was at one time tutor to Prince Harry. See Warton’s
History of English Poetry, ii. 489–513, &c., ed. 1840; also Fuller’s Worthies,
ii. 461, 462, ed. 1840. Erasmus gives Skelton a very different title, in
a letter to Henry the Eighth, styling him ‘Britannicarum literarum lumen et
decus.’ By the ‘Vicar of Hell’ others have supposed Wolsey was meant
(see Lord Herbert’s Henry the Eighth: ‘Briefly, to use Polydore’s words, he
made his private house “Voluptatum omnium sacrarium quo regem frequenter
ducebat”’); others Thomas Cromwell; others Andrew Bilde; others one
Gray, a maker of ‘certaine merry ballades.’ The phrase itself is obviously
a travesty of the Pope’s title of ‘Vicar of Christ.’
9. foraine. There should be no g in the word, any more than in sovereign. The Fr. forain is from the Lat. foraneus.

10. an Indian voyage. The ‘overland’ route to India under such conditions as controlled it in the seventeenth century was excessively protracted and tedious. It was believed that some much shorter route might be discovered by sea, either by a North-East or a North-West passage. See Paradise Lost, x. 289:

‘As when two polar winds, blowing adverse
Upon the Cronian sea, together drive
Mountains of ice that stop the imagined way
Beyond Potsora eastward to the rich
Cathaian coast.’

Where the Cronian = the Northern, the Arctic Sea, and Potsora is the most N.W. province of Muscovy.

12. Catai = Cathay, a province of Tartary, the ancient seat of the Chams. See Paradise Lost, xi. 388; see also Milton’s Brief History of Muscovy, chap. iii, Of Tingoësia and the Countries adjoining eastward as far as Cathay; Maundeville’s Voyage and Travail, chap. xx; Marco Polo’s Travels, Book ii; Smith’s Gibbon, viii. 10 n. From the bad character given the inhabitants by travellers, Cataiain = cheat, sharper, as Merry Wives, ii. 1, &c. See Nares’ Gloss.

by Canada Westward. The discovery of a North-West passage, or passages, has, as is well known, been made in our own time. Whether it is of any great value, except as promoting geographical science, may perhaps be doubted. For a brief general account of efforts towards this discovery, and of the achievement of it, see Milner’s Gallery of Geography, Introd. chap. v, North-Eastern, North-Western, and North-Polar Voyages. See also Lardner’s Cab. Cyc., History of Maritime and Inland Discovery, ii. 136–203; Hakluyt Society’s Narratives of Voyages towards the N.W. in search of a passage to Cathay and India 1496–1631, ed. T. Randall.

[13. Explain our Spanish licencing.]

15. doubtful = fearful. Cp. King John, iv. 1. 130:

‘And, pretty child, sleep doubtful and secure’

&c. Halliwell, in his edition of Nares’ Glossary, quotes from Beaumont and Fletcher:

‘I’ll tell ye all my fears: one single valour,
The virtues of the valiant Caratach
More doubts me than all Britain.’

17. permitted = let pass.

22. as the Prophesie of Isaiah, &c. See Acts viii. 30.

25. Sorbonists = the scholars of the Sorbonne, the great theological school of Paris, founded in 1252 by Robert de Sorbon, confessor and chaplain to Louis IX. ‘This institution, the teachers in which were always doctors and professors of theology, acquired so much fame that its name was extended to the whole theological faculty of the university of Paris, which was called till the end of the eighteenth century Sorbonne. Its opinions and decrees had a
decided influence upon the character of Catholicism in France, &c. (Pep. Encycl., s. v. Sorbonne.) The building had been splendidly restored, or rather a new building had been raised, by Richelieu some twenty-five years before Milton wrote the Areopagitica. ‘It is now the seat of three of the five Faculties of the Academy of Paris, Theology, Sciences and Letters, &c.; see Murray’s Handbook of Paris, &c. Milton mentions the Sorbonists again in his Defence of the People of England, chap. xiv: ‘Finding yourself destitute of any assistance or help from orthodox Protestant divines, you have the impudence to betake yourself to the Sorbonists, whose college you know is devoted to the Romish religion, and consequently but of very weak authority amongst Protestants,’ &c. The reading in Butler’s Hudibras in all editions till 1704 in i. r. 158–9 was—

‘For he a rope of sand could twist
As tough as learned Sorbonist.’

and how fast, &c. Cp. Lycidas, 128–9:

‘Beside what the grim wolf with privy paw
Daily devours apace, and nothing said.’

28. distinct, not = distinguished, but rather clear-headed, definite, decided.
Arminius, or Harmensen, 1560–1609. The change in his views alluded to in the text took place after he had settled at Amsterdam in 1588. See Mosheim, ii. 242, 261; Hallam’s Constitutional Hist. of England, chap. vi, &c.

29. perverted. What favour Arminianism had in Milton’s time found in this country, it had found with Laud and the High Church party. The anti-Episcopalian were for the most part staunchly Calvinistic. Hence perverted, not converted. The Lat. pervertere = to overturn, destroy, corrupt; as Tacitus, Ann. xiii. 45: ‘Ollium honoribus nondum functum amicitia Sejani pervertit,’ &c.

a namelesse discours. ‘A ce moment [just when he became Professor of Theology at Leyden] il fut chargé par Martin Lydias, professeur de théologie à Franeker, de défendre la doctrine de Théodore de Bèze sur la prédestination, qui était attachée par les ministres de Delft, Arminius examina l’ouvrage des ministres, le compara au système de Calvin et de Bèze, balança les raisons de part et d’autre, et finit par adopter les sentiments qu’il s’était proposé de combattre. Il manifesta ses opinions dans ses thèses du 7 février, 1614.’ (Nouvelle Biog. Univ.)

nameless = anonymous.

P. 21. 1. [Explain of either sort.]

8. beyond prohibiting is grammatically co-ordinate with without writing.

9. cautelous is from Lat. cautela, a ‘post-class.’ word. Shakspere has the word twice, Cor. iv. i. 33, and Jul. Caes. ii. r. 129. For other Elizabethan instances, see Nares. The noun occurs in Hamlet in the sense of deceit; i. 3. 14–16: ‘Perhaps he loves you now,
And now no soil nor cautel doth besmirch
The virtue of his will.’

So ‘cautels and subtelties’ in Berners’ Froissart, apud Richardson.

12. the exploit of that gallant man, &c. Cp. the story of the inhabitants
of Borrowdale in Harriet Martineau's Complete Guide to the English Lakes, how they 'determined to build a wall to keep in the cuckoo, and make the spring last for ever.' The wall was built, but was a failure 'because it was not built one course higher.'

13. **pound** is from the A.-S. *pyndan*, to shut in; **pen** is in fact the same word. **Pound**, a weight, is of quite different origin. **Uncorruptedness** = incorruptibility. Cp. 'unreproved,' L'Allegro, 40, &c.; so the Lat. *invictus*, &c.

29. **Aristotle.** See Ethics, i. 3: 'Now each individual judges well of what he knows, and of these he is a good judge. In each particular science, therefore, he is a good judge who has been instructed in them; and universally, he who has been instructed in all subjects. Therefore a young man is not a proper person to study political science, for he is inexperienced in the actions of life; but these are the subjects and grounds of this treatise. Moreover, being inclined to follow the dictates of passion, he will listen in vain, and without benefit, since the end is not knowledge, but practice. But it makes no difference whether he be a youth in age or a novice in character, for the defect arises not from age, but from his life and pursuits being according to the dictates of passion; for to such persons knowledge becomes useless, as it does to the incontinent; but to those who regulate their appetites and actions according to reason, the knowledge of these subjects must be very beneficial.' (Browne.)

30. **Salomon.** See Prov. xvii. 7, xxvi. 5, &c.

our Saviour. See Matt. vii. 6.

[33. What is meant by *idle pamphlet*?]

P. 22. 1. **we must not expose,** &c. 'Trial will come unsought.' Paradise Lost, ix. 366.

8. **want** = be without, as not uncommonly in sixteenth and seventeenth centuries; thus Tempest, iii. 1, when Ferdinand asks Miranda why she weeps, she answers (77–79):

'At mine unworthiness, that dare not offer
What I desire to give, and much less take
What I shall die to want.'

&c. We still speak of 'supplying what is wanting.'

10. **qualifie.** Cp. Two Gentlemen of Verona, ii. 7. 21–23:

'I do not seek to quench your love's hot fire,
But qualify the fire's extreme rage,
Lest it should burn above the bounds of reason.'

13. **contrive** is the Fr. *controuver*.

[What is the grammatical subject of *prevented*?]

14. He now proceeds to Point III, see p. 67.

15. **prevented** = anticipated, fore-run, &c.; Fr. *prévenir*, Lat. *praevenire*. See The Bible Word-book, and Trench's Select Glossary, s.v. The transition of meaning from fore-arriving to obstruction is well illustrated in the former *work from Paradise Lost*, vi. 129:
'Half way he met
His daring foe, at this prevention more
Incens'd.'

16. *hath bin explaining*. *Explaning* here is not a part. but a verbal subs., what is called in Latin grammars a 'gerund.' The prep. 'governing' the subst. has dropped out. The full phrase would be 'hath been on or in explaining.' Cp. 'while the ark was a [= on] preparing' (1 Pet. iii. 20). See Longer English Poems, pp. 228, 234; also Smith's Marsh's Lectures on the Eng. Lang., pp. 462, 472; Morris's Eng. Acc., § 292. In some cases, where the subject is not an inanimate thing but a living, the *-ing* does represent a present part.; thus 'he is going' = Old Eng. 'he is gangende,' not 'he is on gangung.' See Morris, § 291 (3).

17. *ingenuity* = our 'ingeniousness,' openness, frankness — a common Elizabthan sense. So Locke *apud* Johnson: 'If a child when questioned for anything directly confess, you must commend his *ingenuity* and pardon the fault, be it what it will.'

*when she gets a free and willing hand*, &c. See Bacon's Adv. of Learning: 'It appeareth also that logic differeth from rhetoric not only as the fist from the palm, the one close, the other at large; but much more in this, that logic handleth reason exact and in truth, and rhetoric handleth it as it is planted in popular opinions and manners.'

19. *discours* = reason. Hamlet, i. 2. 149: 'a beast that wants *discourse of reason*.' Ib. iv. 4. 36-39:

'... That capability and godlike reason
To fist in us unused.'

See Monbooddo on 'discursus mentis' and 'διαλογις' *apud* Fleming's Vocabulary of Philosophy. 'Reasoning (or discourse),' says Whately, 'is the act of proceeding from certain judgments to another founded on them (or the result of them).'(Logic, ii. 1. § 2.)

20. *which I began with*. So the prep. was usually placed in Elizabethan English. Cp. Morris and Skeat's *Specimens*, ii. p. 272, l. 59, 1872. Later in the seventeenth century it became common to prefix it to the relative. The difference in this matter of collocation between the first and the second editions of Dryden's Essay on Dramatic Poesy has been often noticed.

21. *did use*. The modern usage as to this form of the preterite began to prevail in the latter part of the seventeenth century. By Pope's time it was well established; see Essay on Criticism, 346, &c.

[24. Explain *return* here.]

30. *Plato*. On this 'man of high authority indeed' let the English reader consult Grote and Jowett.

31. *in the book of his laws* = his De Legibus, a distinct work from the De Republica.

P. 28. 2. an Academick night-sitting—a symposium in the Academia. See Paradise Regained, iv. 244:

‘See there the olive-grove of Academe,
Plato’s retirement, where the Attic bird
Trills her thick-warbled notes the summer long.’


4. but by unalterable decree, &c. The language is elliptical here. The sense seems to be: He tolerates no learning but that which he fixes by unalterable decree; and this learning, so fixed, consists, &c. See a similar looseness in Pepys’ Diary, p. 314. Chandos edition: ‘Having staid, and in an hour’s time seen the fire rage every way, and nobody to my sight endeavouring to quench it but to remove their goods and leave all to the fire,’ &c.

7. that no Poet, &c. Μηδέ τινα τολμάν άδειν αδόκιμον μούςαν μη κρινάντων τών νομοφυλάκων μηδ’ αν ήδιον ή τών Θαμώρον τε καί Ὀρφεαν ἅμων. See Jowett’s Plato, iv. 315.


10. to=to apply to, with a view to, &c.

12. Why was he not else, &c. Cp. Milton’s Latin lines De Idea Platonica quemadmodum Aristoteles intellexit, 35–39:

‘At tu, perenne ruris Academi decus,
Haec monstra si tu primus induxisti scholis,
Jamjam poetas, urbis exules tuae,
Revocabis, ipse fabulator maximus:
Aut institutor ipse migrabris foras.’

14. the wanton epigrams and dialogues. The dialogues meant probably are the Symposium and the Phaedrus; but, if so, the epithet is certainly too violent and unsparing.

15. Sophron Minus. Sophron, the mime writer, flourished in Sicily circ. 460–420 B.C. His Fragments are collected by Ahrens, in his De Graecae Linguae Dialectis. See An Apology for Smectymnuus: ‘Nor yet doth he tell us what a mime is, whereof we have no pattern from ancient writers, except some fragments, which contain many acute and wise sentences. And this we know in Laertius, that the mimes of Sophron were of such reckoning with Plato as to take them nightly to read on and after make them his pillow. Scaliger describes a mime to be a poem imitating any action to stir up laughter,’ &c. (Works, p. 78.)

books of grossest infamy. Certainly there are some indecent passages in Aristophanes’ works; but as certainly there are passages of exquisite beauty and noble tone. He is anything but an essentially gross writer.

17. for commending the latter, &c. See above, p. 7. 17–19. Of Plato’s admiration for Aristophanes there can be no doubt; see the Symposium (translated by Shelley) where Aristophanes is introduced in person. An epigram attributed to Plato runs thus:

Al Χάριτες, τέμενός τι λαβέων ὑπὲρ ὁδῷ πεσείται
ζητούσαι, ψυχήν εἴρον Ἀριστοφάνου.

18. the malicious libeller of his chief friends, as of Sokrates in the Clouds, of Nikias (see Plato’s Laches) in the Knights, &c.

19. the Tyrant Dionysius. See above, p. 7, l. 18.

20. trash, or trousses, signified clippings of trees. See Wedgwood, who quotes from Robert of Gloucester, 552:

‘Gret fur he made ther a night of wode and sprai,
And tresche ladher thaboute that me wide sai.’

27. fell upon—threw themselves upon, addressed themselves vigorously to, adopted and enforced with rigour. Cp. ‘fall to,’ as I Henry VI, iii. i. 89, 90: ‘Nay, if we be forbidden stones, we’ll fall to it with our teeth.’ Measure for Measure, i. 2. 3: ‘... why then all the dukes fall upon the King,’ &c. Cp. Lat. incumbere, as ‘incumbe toto pectore ad laudem,’ Cicero, Ad Fam. x. 10. 2; Georgics, i. 213, ‘incumbere ararum.’


‘What boots it at one gate to make defence,
And at another to let in the foe
Effeminately vanquished?’

P. 24. 2. No musick, &c. Plato accepts this necessity in his elaborately regulated republic. See a passage, which was probably in Milton’s mind as he wrote the text, viz. Republic, 398 C–399 E.

3. Dorick. Paradise Lost, i. 549–551:

‘Anon they move
In perfect phalanx to the Dorian mood
Of flutes and soft recorders.’

The Doric was the style of military music, contrasting with the soft Lydian mode (cp. L’Allegro, 136) and the harsh, wild Phrygian. See Müller’s Dorians, 4. 6; ἧ Δωριστὶ ἄρμονια, Aristotle, Politics, viii. 5. 22; Aristophanes, Equites, 989 (where observe the word-play); Plato, Republic, 399 A: Τίνες οὖν μαλακαὶ τε καὶ συμποσικαὶ τῶν ἄρμονίων; Ἰαστί, ἤν δ’ ἰπ’, καὶ Δωριστὶ, αἵτινες χαλαρά καλοῦνται. Ταῦτας οὖν, δ’ φιλε, ἐπὶ πολε-μικῶν ἀνδρῶν ἐσθ ὑ τι χρῆσει; Οὔδαμῶν, ἐφ’ ἀλλὰ κινδυνεύει σοι Δωριστὶ λείπεσθαι καὶ ἄρμονίῳ. κ.τ.λ.

6. for such Plato, &c. See Republic, 400.

9. ghittarrs. The Ital. form is chitarra; the original word is Lat. cithara, Gr. κιθάρα. Amongst the Greeks the instrument so called 'seems to have been identical with the φόρμιγξ, and can have differed little from the λύρα.' (Liddell and Scott.)

10. prattle is a secondary verb from prate. Cp. dab, dapple; drip (drop), dribble, &c.

[How would you parse what they may say?]

11. madrigalls. The first part of the word is said to be Lat. mandra (Martial, v. 22; Juvenal uses it for 'a herd,' iii. 236: 'stantis convivis mandras'); Gr. μάνδρα, a fold, byre, pen, stable; Sophocles, Fragments, 587; μάνδραν εἰς ἱππαλάσσειν; Theocritus, iv. 61. (In Eccles. Gr. a monastery; whence Archimandrite.) Spanish forms are mandrial and mandrigal. The -gal is said to be connected with the Teutonic verb galan (A.-S.), to sing; cp. nightingale. So the word would properly mean a herd song, a pastoral song, 'birtenlied' (Diez), 'chanson de berger,' but it came to be used in a general sense. See 'that smooth song by Kit Marlowe':

'There will we sit upon the rocks,  
And see the shepherds feed their flocks  
By shallow rivers, by whose falls  
Melodious birds sing madrigalls,'

With Milton's 'that whisper softness in chambers,' cp. Dryden's Art of Poetry:

'The madrigal may softer passions move,  
And breathe the tender ecstasy of love.'

(Apud Richardson.) See Diez's Lex. Rom.

13. Baleone's. Diez holds this word to be derived from a Germ. stem—the stem of balken, a beam, rafter. The -one is the common Ital. -one, as in pallone, and in our balloon. The penultimate is long with Sherburne (1618-1702), and with Jenyns (1704-87), and in Cowper's John Gilpin; Swift has it short. See Richardson.

shrewd, strictly = shrewish. Cp. the double sense of sharp, &c. Midsum. Night's Dream, iii. ii. 323:

'O when she's angry, she is keen and shrewd.'

14. Frontispices. This is the correcter orthography; the vulgar spelling is due to an erroneous notion that the latter part of the word is connected with 'piece;' whereas it is from the Lat. specio. (For other instances of false etymologies corrupting orthography, see Max Müller's Lectures on the Science of Language, second series, Lect. xi, &c.) Frontispicum properly = the front-look; in architecture, a house-front. See Paradise-Lost, iii. 506-7:

'The work as of a kingly palace-gate  
With frontispice of diamond and gold  
Embellished.'

16. visitors. Cp. the use of this word at the Universities; also visitation, as Isaiah x. 3, &c.; visit, Exod. xx. 5, &c. Visitant seems rather to have been used in our sense of visitor; thus, 'the great visitant,' Paradise Lost, xi. 225.
lectures = readings. The word was used specially of the Sunday afternoon discourses of Puritan preachers.

17. the bagpipe, now happily almost confined to the North parts of this island, once pervaded the South also. See Chaucer’s Prologue (568–9), of the ‘Mellere:’

‘A bagpipe cowde he blowe and sowne,
And therewithal he brought us out of towne.’

See Chappell’s Popular Music of the Olden Time.

rebbeck. ‘An instrument of music, having cat-gut strings and played with a bow; but originally with only two strings, then with three, till it was exalted into the more perfect violin with four strings. It is thought to be the same with ribible, being a Moorish instrument, and in that language called rebeb. Thence it passed into Italy, where it became ribeca, or ribaça, whence our English word. See Hawkins’s History of Music, vol. ii. p. 96, note.’ (Nares.) See also Chappell’s Popular Music. Du Cange, s. v. Baudosa, quotes from one Aimericus:

‘Quidam rebecam arcubant,
Muliebrem vocem confingentes.’

L’Allegro, 91: ‘the jocund rebecks,’ &c.

ev’n to, &c., i.e. even down to, even as low as, &c.

18. ballatry = balladary. The -ry has a collective force, as in yeomanry, cavalry, peasantry, &c. See note on trashtrie in Longer English Poems, p. 368; Morris’ English Accidence, § 33 and 325. Various forms of ballad are bolade, ballet, &c.; see above, p. 8, l. 3, and the note.

gammuth is from Gamma, ‘the first letter of the musical notation invented by Guido,’ and Lat. ut, ‘the syllable used in singing the first note of the scale’ (the present do). Ital. gamma; Fr. gamme. See Taming of the Shrew, iii. i. 72–8.

18. municipal = country. See the next line. Cp. Burke’s Reflections: ‘We provide first for the poor and with a parental solicitude we have not relegated religion (like something we were ashamed to show) to obscure municipalities or rustick villages.’ This use is ‘Classical.’ ‘As the municipia were subordinate to the capital cities,’ municipalis ‘is sometimes used in a contemptuous sense, analogous to our provincial: municipalis eques (of Cicero), Juv. viii. 236 [238]; m. et cathedrarii oratores, Sidonius, Ep. iv. 3; poetae, id. Carm. ix. 310.’ (Andrews’ Freund.) Cicero, Phil. iii. 15: ‘Videte quam despiciamur omnes, qui sumus e municipiiis.’

19. Arcadia’s. The Countess of Pembroke’s Arcadia was first printed in 1590, four years after Sir Philip Sidney’s death. A more complete edition, differently arranged—the work was left unfinished—was published in 1593. See Hallam’s Lit. of Europe, ii. 411, 438; Taine’s Hist. of Eng. Lit. i. 164–172; Dunlop’s Hist. of Fiction, chap. xi. &c. The Arcadia was immensely popular in the early seventeenth century. See Hallam, iv. 94, &c.

Monte Mayors. Monte Mayor (circ. 1520–1564), a Portuguese by birth,
was the author of the Diana, a pastoral romance, whose popularity spread from Spain, the especial land of romances, all over Europe. See Hallam, ii. 282, 435; Dunlop, chap. xi; Ticknor’s Spanish Literature, iii, 82–84, ed. 1863; Sismondi’s Literature of the South of Europe, chap. xxvi, &c. Shakspere is said to have drawn something of his picture of Proteus and Julia, in the Two Gentlemen of Verona, from the Felix and Felismena of the Diana.

21. hears ill. A Greek idiom. Cp. κακῶς ἀκούειν, κακῶς ἀλείπ. So the Lat. audio, as Horace, Epistles, i. 16. 17:

‘Tu recte vivis, si curas esse quod audis,’
&c.: clueo, frequent in Plautus and Lucretius. See Ben Jonson passim; in the Dedication to the Fox he speaks of his age being one ‘wherein poetry and the professors of it hear so ill on all sides;’ see also his masque Love Restored: ‘They are these make mee hear so ill. both in towne and countrey as I do.’ See also Faerie Queene, i. 5. 23:

‘O what of gods then boots it to be borne,
If old Aveugles sonnes so evill heare?’

Paradise Lost, iii. 7:

‘Or hearst thou rather pure ethereal stream,’ &c.

(=Horace’s ‘libentius audis,’ Satires, ii. 6. 20.)

household gluttony. Cp. Chaucer’s Franklin (Aldine Ed.):

‘Wel loved he in the morn a sop of wyn.
To liven in delite was al his wone,
For he was Epicurius owne sone,
That heeld opynyoun that pleyn delyt
Was verrail felicite perfy.
An househaldere, and that a gret, was he;
Seynt Julian he was in his countre.
His brede, his ale, was alway after oon;
A bettere enwyned man was nowher noon.
Withoute bake mete was never his hous,
Of fleissch and fissch, and that so plentyvous,
It snewed in his hous of mete and drynek,
Of alle deyntees that men cowde thynke.
Aftur the sondry sesouns of the yeer,
He chaunget hem at mete and at soper.
Ful many a fat partrich had he in mewe,
And many a brem and many a luce in stewe.
Woo was his cook but if his sauce were
Poynant and scharp and redy al his gere.
His table dormant in his halfe alway
Stood redy covered al the longe day.’

‘English Epicures,’ Macbeth, v. 3. ‘It is not for nothing that other countries whom we upbraid with drunkenness call us “bursten bellied gluttons,”’

Nash’s Piers Penniless. Sir Andrew Aguecheek’s view has found and finds

22. and what shall be done to inhibit, &c. A question still agitated, and far from settlement.

25. Our garments also, &c. In the later Middle Ages laws were passed defining the dress material that was to be used. See the Statute of Apparel, 1363, &c.; Fairholt's Costume in England, second edit., p. 116, &c. "Acts of Apparel" were passed in the reigns of Edward IV, Henry VIII, Mary, and Elizabeth. See the decree of 1597 in the Egerton Papers (Camden Society), pp. 247-256. Such interferences have now long been desisted from. Listen to Adam Smith: "It is the highest impertinence and presumption therefore in kings and ministers to pretend to watch over the economy of private people, and to restrain their expense either by sumptuary laws or by prohibiting the importation of foreign luxuries." (Wealth of Nations, book II. chap. iii.) See Lecky's Rationalism in Europe, ii. 285, ed. 1875.

27. garb. "Formerly applied to the mode of doing anything, but latterly confined to the fashion of dress." (Wedgwood.) Cp. Span. and Ital. garbo, &c. See Dicz, who connects the stem with "Old H. Germ. garawā, garwā, schmuck." This garwā = A.-S. gearwa, our gear.

28. as is the fashion of this Country. See almost any foreign work on English life and manners.

30. what presum'd; i.e. what degree of presumption—of liberty and boldness generally—may be permitted, how far we may go. This seems the sense rather than what Mr. Lobb suggests, who paraphrases "what should be only implied," opposing the words to "what may be only talked about" (=what shall be discorse'd). The rhythm of the sentence is against confining the words and no furder to what presum'd. They apply just as much to what discorse'd.

P. 25. 2. to sequester = to withdraw, retire. The verb is generally transitive; thus Sir T. More, Workes, p. 1046, apud Richardson: "For hym hathe God the father sealed. This is to sai that him hath God the father specially sequestred and severed and set aside out of the number of al creatures." So Gray's Elegy, 75. The word is of Latin law origin.

Atlantis. See Bacon's New Atlantis. Bacon took the name from Plato's Timaeus (24 E–25 A), and his Critias; see Critias, chap. vii.

3. Eutopian. See More's Utopia, printed in Latin in 1516, translated into English by Ralph Robinson, and printed first in 1551, and again in 1556. See a re-issue of the second edition among Arber's English Reprints. For the orthography, the first syllable represents the Gr. ou (though perhaps
Milton thought so, to judge from his spelling, which is also Sidney’s in the *Apol. for Poëtrie*, the whole word signifying ‘Nowheria.’ Sir Thomas More’s knowledge of Greek was evidently not unlimited. Cp. *Brewton*, the title of a book lately published, which is nowhere, written as nearly backwards as may be.

*politeia = polērēs*, political systems. Not *polities*, as is commonly printed; e.g. in Bohn’s edition.

[6. Explain unavoidably here.]


13. *These they be, &c.* Cp. Horace, Odes, iii. 24. 35, 36, and 51-54:

*Quid leges sine moribus*

*Vanae proficiunt?*

*Eradenda cupidinis*

*Pravi sunt elementa, et tenerae nimis*

*Mentes asperioribus*

*Formandae studiis.*

21. *pittance, Fr. pitance, It. piantanza, &c.* The word ‘au sens propre désigne la portion que reçoit un moine à chacun de ses repas. Il est encore employé aujourd’hui avec cette signification dans le langage monastique.’ It is the Med. Lat. *pientanica*, which ‘dérive de pietatem et désigne le produit de la charité, de la piété des fidèles. On appelait de même au moyen âge *misericordia* (pitié, compassion) certains repas monastiques.’ (Brachet.) See also Du Cange. See Chaucer’s Prologue, 223, 224, of the Friar:

*He was an esy man to yeve penance*

*Ther as he wiste to han a good pittance.*

Cp. Prymne’s *Treachery and Disloyalty*, part ii. p. 33, *apud* Richardson: ‘They have beene allowed only a poore pittance of Adam’s ale and scarce a penny bread to support their lives.’ The monastic officer who distributed the doles was called *pitanzierius*; Fr. *pitanzier*. Wedgwood derives the word from *opitangant* or *apitangant = appétissant*; wrongly, I should say. In the text it seems to mean not so much ‘an allowance,’ as ‘allowancing,’ i.e. a system of allowance.

23. *grammcer. Cp.* ‘What thank have ye?’ Luke vi. 32, &c. Chaucer gives the word in the agglutinative stage; see the Canterbury Tales, ed. Wright, 8964, 8965:

*‘Grammcer, lord, God thank it you, quod sche,*

*That ye han saved me my children deere.*

So in The Dream, wrongly attributed to Chaucer. For the use here cp. Utopia, ii. 8: ‘For many of them they bring home sometimes, paying very little for them, yea, most commonly getting them for *gramercy.*’ Coleridge uses the word, somewhat inaccurately, but according to Johnson’s account of it (see Dictionary), as an exclamation, in Ancient Mariner, 164:

*Gramercy! they for joy did gyn.*
24. many there be that, &c. He wrote Paradise Lost to
‘assert eternal Providence,
And justify the ways of God to men.’
See esp. iii. 80–134.
28. a meer artificial Adam, &c. = an automaton, a νεφοσωστον ἄγαλμα
(Herodotus, ii. 48), a thing moved ἄφοχον δικην ὄργανον (Clemens Alexandrinus, 598).
artificial. See Bacon’s Adv. of Learning, ed. Wright, Gloss. s.v.
in the motions = in the puppet-shows. See Ben Jonson’s Bartholomew Fair, 5th Act, passim; Winter’s Tale, iv. 2, 102; ‘Then he compass’d a motion
of the Prodigal Son,’ &c. This kind of entertainment is of very ancient origin.
Herodotus says it was introduced from Egypt (ii. 48); see Bekker’s Charicles,
185 n. ed. 1854; Hone’s Strutt’s Sports and Pastimes of the People of England,
pp. 165–167; Hone’s Ancient Mysteries Described, 225, 229, 230;
Spectator, No. 14, &c. See also Goethe’s Wilhelm Meister’s Apprenticeship,
chaps. ii–viii.
31. esteem not of = do not think highly of. So Spenser, To Sir Walter
Raleigh: ‘seeing all things accounted by their shows and nothing esteemed of,’
&c.
31. provoking = inviting, enticing, &c. Heb. x. 24: ‘And let us consider
one another to provoke unto love and to good works,’ &c.
23. gives us minds, &c. Hamlet, ii. 2. 315: ‘What a piece of work is
man,’ &c.
26. scanting. The adj. scant = that which is measured exactly, and so =
spare; from Norse skamta, a measure, connected with skammr, short; see
Cleasby and Vigfusson.
29. better done. Lycidas, 67: ‘were it not better done,’ &c.
32. dram is contracted with drachm, Gr. δραχμή. For the sense here
cp. Hamlet, i. 4. 36.
P. 27. 1. [What ‘part of speech’ is sure here?]
3. whatever thing we hear or see, &c. Cp. the Duke’s experience in As
You Like It, ii. 1. 15–17:
‘And this our life exempt from public haunt
Finds tongues in trees, books in the running brooks,
Sermons in stones, and good in everything.’
9. that continu’d Court-libell, &c. = the Mercurius Aulicus, a virulent
Royalist paper, published regularly once a week from the beginning of 1642
to the latter end of 1645, and afterwards occasionally, by Sir John Birkenhead,
Reader in Moral Philosophy at Oxford; see Holt White’s note. The
Civil Wars of the seventeenth century were the birth-time of newspapers.
(The English Mercurie of 1588 has been shown to be a forgery.) See
Disraeli’s Cur. of Lit., art. Origin of Newspapers.
15. blind-fold. The full form would be blindfolded.
17. frustrat. This form comes straight from the Latin.

27. *officials.* A most odious term at the time Milton wrote. 'An Official was the name of the Officer in the Ecclesiastical Courts to whom the Bishops deputed the cognizance of spiritual offences. Laud had let them loose over the country.' So Holt White, who quotes from Of Reformation ('a band of rooking Officials,' &c.), from Cartwright's Ordinary, and from Clarendon the statement that Sir Edward Deering presented 'a Bill for the utter eradication of Bishops, Deans, and Chapters; with all Chancellors, Officials, and all Officers and other Persons belonging to either of them.'

28. *that the Commonwealth,* &c. He is thinking of the decree of the Roman senate in critical times—'dare operam Consules ne quid Republica detrimenti caperet.'

29. *damnify'd.* Faerie Queen, ii. 6. 43:

"Harrow now out and well away!" he cryde;
"What dismal day hath lent this cursed light
To see my Lord so deadly damnifyde?"

The compound *indemnify* is common enough.


4. *condiscend.* So Faerie Queen, v. 7. 25:

'Thereto they both did frankly condiscend.'

Carew, Survey of Cornwall, f. 88, has 'condiscended;' Fabyan, an. 1361, 'condyscedid.' See Richardson.

7. *story* = history. See above, p. 9. l. 11.

8. *of many sects,* &c. See Drayton's Polyolbion and Selden's notes—a work with which Milton often shows familiarity; Song x, where some complaining of the want of evidence there is for the older history of Britain,

'Thus do I answer these:
That th' ancient British priests, the fearless Druides,
That minister'd the laws, and were so truly wise,
That they determin'd states, attending sacrifice,
To letters never would their mysteries commit,
For which the breasts of men they deem'd to be more fit;
Which questionless should seem from judgment to proceed.
For, when of ages past we look in books to read,
Weretchlessly discharge our memory of those.
So when injurious time such monuments doth lose
(As what so great a work, by time that is not wrackt?)
We utterly forego that memorable act;
But when we lay it up within the minds of men
They leave it their next age; that leaves it hers agen;
So strongly which (me thinks) doth for tradition make,
As if you from the world it altogether take,
You utterly subvert antiquity thereby.'

The note compares the Cabalists, 'which until of late time wrote not, but taught and learnt by mouth and diligent hearing of their rabbins.'
10. The Christian faith, &c. The earliest Gospel in point of date is said to be that of St. Matthew; the earliest Pauline Epistle is the 1st to the Thessalonians. Possibly St. Peter’s and St. James’ may be older than any of St. Paul’s. However this may be, all the Epistles imply an already established Christianity.

[21. What is the force of sit here?]  

22. be wafted, &c. = to float over the river which according to the ancient mythology divides life from death.

25. journey-work = day-work, day-labourer’s work, the work of a journeyman or un homme de journée, set, mechanical, servile work.

29. upon his head. Cp. poll-tax, &c.; also the use of Lat. caput, Gr. κάπα.


hand. So fiss also is used: see below, p. 32. l. 7. Cp. Lat. manus, as Cicero, Ad Att. viii. 13: ‘Lippitudinis meae signum tibi sit librarii manus,’ &c. ‘Know you the hand?’ Hamlet, iv. 7. 52.

P. 29. 1. would not down. Cp. the verbal use of up, away, &c. The emphatic word absorbs into itself, so to speak, the power of the formal verb; thus to down = to go down, &c. So ἀνέβω, as Homer, Il. vi. 331, &c.

4. of a sensible nostrill. A Latin phrase; see Horace, Satires, i. 3. 29 and 30:

‘Iracundior est paulo, minus aptus acutis  
Naribus horum hominum.’

Cp. I. iv. 8, ‘Emunctae naris;’ Epod. xii. 3, ‘naris obesae;’ Epistles, i. 19. 45, ‘naribus uti;’ also Satires, i. 6. 5, ‘naso suspendis adunco Ignotos;’ ii. 8, 64, &c. Orelli compares Plato’s use of ὀσρυκός, Republic, 343 A. Cp. also Cowper’s Task, ii. 256:

‘Strew the deck  
With lavender, and sprinkle liquid sweets,  
That no rude savour maritime invade  
The nose of nice nobility.’

(See Shakspere, 1 Henry IV, i. 3. 45.) But our corresponding metaphor is taken not from the nose but the palate. We speak of a ‘man of taste.’ Cp. the French de bon goût.

sensible = our sensitive. So Dryden apud Johnson:

‘Even I the bold, the sensible of wrong,  
Restrain’d by shame, was forced to hold my tongue.’

Cp. sensibility. Locke speaks of ‘sensitive knowledge,’ meaning knowledge reaching no further than the existence of things actually present to the senses, (= our sensuous).

5. crave. A.-S. crafsian, to ask.

[7. What part of the sentence is looking on it, &c.?]

14. ridd. Kid is cognate with Germ. retten, to save, rescue.

15. unthrift = prodigal. ‘Some in Parys sayde: “It is pytie these
Berners' Froissart, apud Richardson.

17. salary. The Latin salarium originally denoted salt-money, money given the soldiers for salt, and then generally an allowance, stipend, &c. The word, which of course came to us through the French, is certainly as old in England as Piers the Plowman, where it occurs in the form salerye.

23. He now comes to Point IV, see p. 67.

the no good. Cp. the use of οὐ in Gr.; as, ἡ τῶν γεφυρῶν οὐ δίλυσις, Thucydides, i. 137; οὐ οὔτε περιτελείον, Ib. iii. 95; οὐκ ἐξουσία, Ib. v. 50, &c. So τὸ μὴ καλὸν, Sophocles, Antigone, 370, &c.

26. It was the complaint, &c. Mr. Osborn notes that 'when the Bill for abolishing Bishops, Deans, and Chapters was before the House of Commons, Dr. Hackett was heard in their defence (1641), and urged "that their endowments were encouragements to Industry and Virtue, and were serviceable for the advancement of Learning." These were the arguments usually adopted in their favour.'

28. pluralities. Plurality was a crying offence in Milton's eyes; see Apology for Smectymnuus: 'The Prelate himself, being a pluralist, may under one surplice, which is also linnen, hide four benefices, besides the metropolitan toe,' &c. On the New Forces of Conscience, 1-6:

Because you have thrown off your prelate-lord,
And with stiff vows renounced his Liturgy,
To seize the widowed where Plurality
From them whose sin ye envied, not abhorred,
Dare ye for this adjure the civil sword
To force our consciences that Christ set free?

See also The Second Defence, &c.

29. dasht. Comus, 451-2:

'Noble grace that dashed brute violence
With sudden adoration and blank awe.'

Psalm vi. 21:

'Mine enemies shall all be blank and dashed
With much confusion.'

30. I never found cause, &c. See Remonstrant's Defence: 'It had been happy for this land, if your priests had been but only wooden . . . . If you mean by wooden, illiterate or contemptible, there was no want of that sort among you; and their number increasing daily, as their laziness, their tavern-hunting, their neglect of all sound literature, and their liking of doltish and monastical schoolmen daily increased.' Also The likeliest Means to Remove &c.: ' . . . as if with divines learning stood and fell, wherein for the most part their pittance is so small.'

P. 30. 3. discontent. Suckling's Sessions of the Poets:

'Those that were there thought it not fit
To discontent so ancient a wit.'
17. over it is, &c. The full phrase would be 'over what it is,' &c.; but 'what' having occurred just before in what advantage, Milton does not care to repeat it.

18. scape-goat. Cp. crayfish with derive, crave with eraser, &c. Escape is perhaps ultimately cognate with ship; see Mr. Jerram's Par. Reg., Gloss.

19. ferula = the rod, the cane, the 'tawse' (see Jamieson). Mr. Skeat sends me a sketch of the thing from an old seal in his possession. It expanded at the end—the end designed for the victim—into a flat round; that is, it was in shape like a battledore with the handle lengthened and the bat diminished, and so well adapted for effect on the palm of the hand, which was the part of application; see Gerard Dow's picture of the Schoolmaster in the Fitz-William Museum, Cambridge. See Defence of the People of England: 'If I had leisure, or that if it were worth my while, I could reckon up so many barbarisms of yours in this one book as, if you were to be chastiz'd for them as you deserve, all the school-boys ferulas in Christendome would be broken upon you.' See other instances—from Bishop Hall's Censure of Travel and Feltham's Resolves—opud Richardson; also Gosson's School of Abuse, p. 24, ed. Arber. The stem is the Lat. ferula, which is of the same root as ferire, to strike; see Horace, Satires, i. 3. 120; Juvenal, i. 15, where see Mayor's note. See Martial, Epigrams, xiv. 80, 'Ferulce': 'Inviae nimium puere grataeque magistris
Clara Prometheo munere ligna sumus.'

The form ferularis is not found in Classical Latin; the Classical adjs. are ferulaceus and feruleus. Ferularis would seem an analogue of regularis. But it may be the ferular of the text is a misprint for ferula.

fescu = the wand or pointer; another form is festu. Lat. festuca, a stalk, stem, small stick. See Remonstrant's Defence: 'A minister that cannot be trusted to pray in his own words without being chewed to, and fescue'd to a formal injunction of his rote lesson, should as little be trusted to preach, &c.' See Sir T. More's Workes, p. 1102: 'But I shall afterward anon lay it afore him agayne and sette him to it with a fescue that he shall not say but he saw it.' See Way's Promptorium Parvulorum, s. v. festu, note: 'In Piers Ploughman's Vision, line 6183 [Mr. Skeat's B-Text, x. 278, festu], where allusion is made to Matth. vii. 3, the mote in the eye, festuca, is termed fescu. [So in the Wyclifftite version.] The Medulla likewise renders "fescua, a festu or lyttel mote." The name was applied to the straw, or stick, used for pointing in the early instruction of children: thus Palsgrave gives "fescue, to spell with, festev." Occasionally the name is written with c or k, instead of t; but it is apparently a corruption [probably due to writing, as there is often confusion in MSS. between c and t]. "Festu, a fescue, a straw, rush, little stalk or stick, used for a fescue. Touche a fescue; also a pen or a pin for a pair of writing tables." Core.' In the Puritan, one of the plays falsely ascribed to Shakspere, fessue = dial-hand; see iv. 2, Sir Godfrey Plus loq. : 'Nay, put by your chats nowe; fall to your business roundly; the fessue of the dial is
upon the christ-cross of noon.' The form feastrau, given by Halliwell, Dictionary of Archaic and Provincial Words, is clearly due to some crude popular etymology. In Somersetshire occurs the form vester; see Jennings' Glossary of West Country Words.

21. the them. This was the old grammar-school word for an essay; cp. Fr. thème. See Locke, On Education, § 171: 'As to themes they have I confess the pretence of something useful, which is to teach people to speak handsomely and well on any subject.'

a Grammar lad = a grammar-school lad. The phrase is still so used provincially, as in Durham.

22. utter’d. To utter = to outer, send out, issue. We still speak of uttering coin.'

22. without the cursory eyes, &c. = without his eyes running over or surveying it. Henry V, v. 2. 77-8:

'I have but with a cursory eye
O'er-glanced the articles.'

a temporizing and extemporizing licencer = a licencer who considers only the expediencies of the moment, and arranges offhand the means to satisfy them.

25. standing to, &c. = standing close to, in near connection with, &c. So 'Sir John stands to his word,' 1 Henry IV, i. 2. 130, &c.; and so our present usage.

P. 31. 4. considerat. On the active sense of passive participles in Elizabethan English see Abbott's Shakespearian Grammar, § 294 and 374. Considerate has retained its active sense.

5. watchings. Watch, wake, wait are but various forms from A.-S. wacian.

6. expence of Palladian oyl. 'Operam et oleum perdere' was a common Latin phrase. See Cicero, Ad. Fam. vii. 1. 3 (perhaps in the Latin phrase there is allusion to athletes' oil; see l.c.); Ad. Att. ii. 17; see also xiii. 38: 'ante lucem quum scriberem contra Epicurius, de codem oleo et opera exaravi nescio quid ad te et ante lucem dedi.' Lucubration means originally a working by lamplight.

Palladian oyl = learned oil. The olive-tree was sacred to Pallas Athens; of which dedication Milton perhaps here suggests a meaning. 'The old mythology was never a dry and forceless thing to him. He, like Bacon, discerns in it 'the wisdom of the ancients.' The oil-light, by which men of learning studied, was a gift of the goddess of learning. In the Latin poets Pallas sometimes = oil, as Ovid, Tristia, iv. 5. 3.

unleasur’d = ἀκολούθε.

10. pumie. Fumy = pumé = puis-né, i.e. post-natus or after-born. See Bishop Hall's Resolutions for Religion, apud Richardson: 'Or [if any shall usurp] a motherhood to the rest . . . . and make them but daughters and pumies to her,' &c. Of the Evil Angels: 'If still this privilidge were ordinary left in the church, it were not a work for puisness and novices, but for the
NOTES.

12. *bayl* is ultimately from Latin *bajulus*, a bearer, porter.

17. *under the Press.* 'We say 'in.' 'Sub prelo' is the common sixteenth century Latin phrase.

19. *diligentest.* See above, note to p. 15, l. 15.

20. *dares.* Commonly, when we use *dares* with another verb, we do not inflect the 3rd person; we treat it like the auxiliary verbs; but when it 'governs an accusative,' then we inflect it. 'We say 'he dares not go,' but 'he dares him to go.' See Morris's Eng. Acc., p. 184. The fact is that the words are different. The auxiliary *dare* is really an old preterite, like wot, wont, old, &c. See Grein's Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Poesie, Glossar., s. v. durran.; also Skeat's Moeso-Gothic Dict. p. 294.

23. *jaunt.* Old English *jaunce*, Old French *jancer*, 'to jolt, or jog.' (Wedgwood.) See Shakspere, Richard II, v. 5. 94:

‘Spurr’d, gall’d, and tri’d by *jauncing* Bolingbroke.’

Ben Jonson's Tale of a Tub, ii. 1:

‘Faith, would I had a few more *geances on't.*’

27. *accuratest* = most carefully considered, soundest.

29. [What is the meaning of *melancholy* here?]

31. *Doctor* is literally a teacher, as Cicero, Ad Fam. vii. 19, &c.

P. 32. 1. *patriarchal licener.* There is an allusion to Laud here. There was a popular rumour that he wished to become the Patriarch of the Western Church. See the quotation from Somers' Tracts, iv. 434, Scott's edition, *apud* Holt White; also Of Reformation, where Milton says that 'whenever the Pope shall fall' the Bishops will try to get what they can out of the ruin, 'hee a Patriarchdome, and another what comes next hand; as the French Cardinal [Richelieu] of late, and the *See of Canterbury* hath plainly affected.'

*patriarchal* = patriarch-like, who assumes the authority of a patriarch or head of 'the House.' Παπάρχης, compounded of παπή and ἄρχεις, = race-chief. In Eccl. Greek it was the title borne by the Bishops of Rome, Jerusalem, Antioch, and Alexandria.

2. *hidebound* is used of beasts, and of trees that cannot grow because their hides or barks are so thick; similarly of corn. See Overbury's Characters, The Franklin: 'He is never known to go to law; understanding to be law-bound among men is like to be *hidebound* among his beasts—thry thrive not under it.' See from Boyle's Works, vi. 483, *apud* Richardson. Cp. *barkbound:* see Mahn's Webster.

*which he calls his judgement.* Cp. the late Lord Westbury's phrase: 'what he is pleased to call his mind.'

4. *pedanick* = schoolmaster-like, pedagogic. With the latter word it is said by some to be etymologically almost identical: *pedant*, they say, is contracted from *pedagogant* (is there such a word?), which is a secondary form.
pedagogue. More probably, as Diez holds, it is from a Latinized form of the
Gr. πανδέβους, the Ital. pandante. For pandant in the sense of 'schoolmaster'
see e.g. Love's Labour's Lost, iii. 1. 179:
'A domineering pandant o'er the boy,' &c.
What is now the common use began to prevail in the course of the seventeenth
century. See Spectator, 105: 'A man that has been brought up among books
and is able to talk of nothing else, is a very indifferent companion and what
we call a pandant.' Coleridge, Biographia Literaria, chap. io, says that
'pandantry consists in the use of words unsuitable to the time, place, and
company.'
5. ding = fling; originally, to strike, as Havelok the Dane, l. 215, the
king

'Ofte dede him sore swinge
And wit hondes smerte dinges;
So that the blod ran of his feys,
That tender was, and swithe neys.'
Ib. 227.

Thanne he hauede ben ofte swungen,
Ofte shriven and ofte dungens,' &c.
of Old Eng., Halliwell's Dict. of Archaic and Provincial Words, Vigfusson's
Icel. Dict., s. v. dengja, &c.
5. a coil's distance. Cp. Gr. δισκοῦρα, as Homer, Iliad, xxi. 523;
Ib. 431:

δοσα δὲ δισκου ὀβρα κατωμαδιου πέλουται,
ἠ' αἴζηδο ἀφηκεν ἀνήρ, πειράμασος ἡβης,
τόσον ἐπεδραμέτην.
7. fist. Cp. above, note, p. 28, l. 33. See Roister Doister, iii. 4. 43,
where the Scrivener bids Ralph

'Loke on your own fist,' &c.
10. Stationer = the bookseller, or the publisher. All that the word meant
to begin with was one who had a station or stall in the market-place. See
Trench's Select Glossary, s. v.; Dryden's Mac Flecknoe, 95; Dunciad, ii. 31,
&c. Trench quotes from Fuller's Appeal of Injured Innocence: 'I doubt not
but that the Animadverter's Stationer doth hope and desire that he hath thus
pleased people in his book for the advancing of the price and quickening the
sale thereof.'
11. [What is meant by return here?]
14. this, i.e. the licensed book under consideration.
15. from Sir Francis Bacon. See Bacon's tract entitled An Advertisement
touching the Controversies of the Church of England, written 1589, first pub-
lished in 1640 (he is speaking of the attempts of the bishops to suppress
certain pamphlets): 'And indeed we see it ever falleth out that the for-
bidden writing is always thought to be certain sparks of a truth that fly up
in the faces of those that seek to choke it and tread it out; whereas a book
NOTES.

authorized is thought to be but "temporis voces," the language of the time." Milton quotes again from this tract, below, p. 38; again in the Animaadversions, p. 57 of Prose Works: "... insomuch that Sir Francis Bacon in one of his discourses complains of the bishops' uneven hand over these pamphlets, confining those against bishops to darkness, but licensing those against Puritans to be uttered openly, though with the greater mischief of leading into contempt the exercise of religion in the persons of sundry preachers, and disgracing the higher matter in the meaner person." See also Apology for Smectymnuus, p. 84 of Prose Works. See Spedding's Letters and Life of Bacon, i. 78.

17. which will be, &c. He will be a difficult man to succeed, as we say. It is too much to hope that there should be two licensers of extraordinary judgment one after the other. Mr. Lobb takes the words differently. He paraphrases: 'and if this should be the case the further continuance of the system would be seriously imperilled.'

22. never so famous. So Psalm lxxviii. 5: 'charmers charming never so wisely.' Midsummer Night's Dream, iii. 2. 442:

'Never so weary, never so in woe,
I can no further crawl, no further go,' &c.

See Abbott's Shak. Gr., § 52.

25. ventrōsus = venturesome, daring, audacious. Dryden's Knight's Tale:

'The ventrōsus knight is from the saddle thrown.'

Faerie Queene, iv. ii. 7:

'Who sore against his will did him retaine,
For feare of perill which to him mote fall
Through his too ventrōsus prowess proved over all.'

27. decrepit means originally noiseless, and so forceless, weak, effete. Plautus speaks of a 'vetulus decrepitus senex,' Mercator, ii. 2. 43. 'In decrepitos me numeros et extrema languentes,' writes Seneca, Ep. 26.

28. though it were Knox, &c. Possibly he alludes to an edition of Knox's History of the Reformation in Scotland, in which that work appeared with passages expunged. Disraeli refers to this mutilation in his article on 'The Licensers of the Press' in Curiosities of Literature: 'Knox, whom Milton calls "the Reformer of a Kingdom," was also curtailed;' (also = as well as Buchanan's History of Scotland). But was this edition mutilated by the licensers, or by the editor himself? See Holt White.

Knox's life (1515-72) has been written by McCrie (1812) and Brandes (1863). Milton mentions him again in his Tenure of Kings and Magistrates, p. 238 of Prose Works: 'In the year 1564 John Knox, a most famous divine and the reformer of Scotland to the presbyterian discipline,' &c.; and in his Observations on the Articles of Peace, p. 268 of Prose Works: 'But these blockish presbyters of Clandeboy know not that John Knox, who was the first founder of presbytery in Scotland, taught professedly the doctrine of deposing and of killing kings.'

30. their dash, i. e. their erasure, their 'dele.'
32. *perfunctory*—merely and narrowly official. Richardson gives from Bishop Hall’s Sermon on Ecclesiastes iii. 4: ‘Let not our mourning be perfunctory and fashionable; but serious and hearty and zealous, so that we may furrow our cheeks with our tears.’

*to what an author, &c.* Holt White suggests that the work referred to is the posthumous volumes of Coke’s Institutes, published in 1641. Or is it Knox’s History of the Reformation in Scotland? See above, l. 28.

P. 33. 2. *till a more convenient season.* It would seem that such a season never came, as neither to Festus, whose phrase it is with regard to a second interview with St. Paul (Acts xxiv. 25).

5. *such iron moulds,* i. e. such cancers.

9. *the more.* The = by that much; Lat. eo. It is an old ablative.
15. *every knowing person.* See below, p. 46, l. 13, ‘a knowing people.’
19. *set so light by,* &c. Cp. ‘to set store by,’ &c. Perhaps *light* in this phrase should be *lite* or *little,* i. e. represents the old *lyte,* A.-S. *lytel.* *By* = by the side of, in comparison with; Gr. *επί,* and *νπός.* So ‘to set so light by,’ &c., is ‘to compare with what is so little,’ &c., = to reckon or rate at so little, put so low an estimate upon.

*the invention.* Shakspere calls Venus and Adonis ‘the first heir of my invention.’ Henry V, Prologue:

> ‘O for a Muse of fire that would ascend  
> The bright heaven of invention,’ &c.

*the art* = the power to express and embody what ‘the invention’ suggests.
21. *it* = the whole intellectual power of which the specific faculties—if ‘faculties’ is not an obsolete word—have just been mentioned.
26. *monopoliz’d.* The age of State monopolies, which had been felt inexpressibly odious, was only just past. See Hallam’s Const., Hist., chap. vi.
27. *tickets* = perhaps labels describing the quality, price, &c. of the goods on which they were placed; or labels testifying the goods are licensed to be sold; or better, as Holt White: ‘Acknowledgements for goods obtained on credit were then called *Tickets;*’ see the instances he quotes. Hence our ‘slang’ phrase ‘to go on *tick;*’ In derivation *ticket* is connected with *stick,* &c. The old Fr. form is *esticquette.*


*standards,* such as are established in trade matters, as for weights and measures, &c. See Blackstone, On the Royal Prerogative as to Weights and Measures, Kerr’s ed. i. 270–272.

28. *a staple commodity* = a law-defined, chartered commodity. See Kerr’s Blackstone, i. 308: ‘These [customs on wool, skins, and leather] were
formerly called the hereditary customs of the crown; and were due on the exportation only of the said three commodities and of none other; which were styled the *staple* commodities of the kingdom, because they were obliged to be brought to those ports where the king’s staple was established in order to be there first rated and then exported,’ &c.

31. *like that impos’d,* &c. See 1 Sam. xiii. 19–22.

32. *coulter,* or *colter,* is the Lat. *culter,* which is from *colo.*

P. 34. 12. *disparagement* means strictly ‘an ill pairing,’ a mésalliance. So *disparage,* Faerie Queene, iv. 8. 50. Cp. Camden’s Elizabeth, an. 1563: ‘They disdained this marriage with Dudley as altogether *disparageable* and most unworthy of the blood royal and royal majesty.’ The general sense of any unworthy association, and so of degradation, prevailed in the seventeenth century.

17. *jealous.* Lowland Scottish retains this verb; see *jealous* and *jalous* in Jamieson.

26. *nor that neither.* Observe the double negative. Instances of it occur in this phrase certainly as late as Goldsmith.

P. 35. 2. *laick,* strictly = popular, pertaining to the people; Gr. *laikós,* but has a depreciatory sense. Cp. *lewd,* *vulgar.* See Of Church Government: ‘We have learnt the scornful term of *laick,*’ &c.

5. *conceit,* i. e. conception. Etymologically *conceit,* Ital. *conetto,* is a corruption of the Latin *conceptum.*

12. *en chiridion,* *γραφειδίον* = hand-book, Lat. *manuale.* Observe the word-play here; *en chiridion* also signifies ‘a dagger,’ as Thucydides, iii. 70. Erasmus sports similarly, as Holt White notes: ‘Dedi *En chiridion* [his En chiridion Militis Christiani]; ille contra *gladiolum,* quo non magis adhuc sum usus quam ille libro.’ Life by Jortin, i. 358. In the sense of a hand-book the word was common in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries.

*the castle St. Angelo of an Imprimatur,* i. e. without the protection of some Papacy-born license. He refers to the fact that the Castle of St. Angelo, then the Pope’s prison, was once the papal fortress. Originally the Mausoleum of Hadrian, it was first occupied as the papal fortress by Pope John XII in the tenth century. In time it passed to other uses. See Murray’s *Rome.*

16. *f abolish.* See Love’s *Labour’s Lost,* ii. i. 13, 14:

‘Good lord Boyet, my beauty, though but mean,
Needs not the painted flourish of your praise.’

Richard III, i. 3. 241:

‘Poor painted queen, vain flourish of my fortune.’

The word was technically used of a blast of trumpets, as Richard III, iv. 4. 148.

17. *what I have heard,* &c. See his account of his travels in his Second Defence, pp. 933, 934 of Prose Works.

19. *their lerned men.* In the Second Defence, i. c., he mentions *lerned*
Gaddi, Carolo Dati, Frescobaldo, &c. at Florence, Lucas Holstein ‘and other
learned and ingenious men’ at Rome, Manso Marquis of Villa at Naples.

36. *fustian.* In the Apology for Smectymnuus he speaks of ‘Apuleius,
Arnobius, or any modern *fustianist.*’ *Fustian* denotes originally a sort of
course cloth; then stuffing, padding; in literature it denotes words without

27. Galileo, born 1564 (the year of Shakspere’s birth), died 1642. See
his Life by Brewster; also Hallam’s Lit. of Europe, 1600–1650, chap. viii.

28. *prisoner to the Inquisition.* He seems at the time Milton visited him
(1638) to have been in what the Latins called *libera custodia,* i. e. not con-
fined in any dungeon, but only kept under a certain restraint, as that he
should not move away from a specified neighbourhood, or perhaps a special
house.

*for thinking in astronomy,* &c. As is well known, he held that the earth
moved round the sun, and not the sun round the earth. Milton himself can
scarcely be said to have accepted his views, but evidently they attracted him.
See especially Paradise Lost, viii. 122–158:

‘What if the sun

Be centre to the world, and other stars,’ &c.;
also iv. 591–597. Wilkins (1614–1672) seems to have been one of the first
Englishmen who formally supported them. See Morley’s *First Sketch of
English Literature,* p. 571:

29. *the Franciscan,* &c. On the connection of the Dominicans with the
Inquisition see above, note to p. 6, l. 26.

nvii.; also Milton’s own Of Reformation in England, &c.

P. 36. 3. *forgotten,* i. e. made forgotten, caused to be forgotten. So
sometimes in Elizabethan English *remember* = to make remembered, &c. See
below, p. 38, l. 15.

7. *parts,* i. e. of the world. So we may still speak of Foreign Parts.

9. *in time of Parlament.* From 1629 to 1640 had been a time of no
Parliament. See Hallam.

11. *without envy* = *sine invidia, absit invidia,* without exciting any odium
against me. Cp. Reason for Church Government, p. 43 of Prose Works:
‘Yet for me sitting here below in the cool element of prose, a mortal thing
among many readers of no empyreal conceit, to venture and divulge unusual
things of myself, I shall petition to the gentler sort, it may not be *envy* to
me.’

12. *an honest quaestorship,* &c. Cicero was Lilybaean quaestor in Sicily
75 B.C.

*quaestorship.* The duties of the quaestor were concerned with the public
money.

14. *Verres.* The extortionate propraetor in Sicily 73–71 B.C.; against
whom the famous Verriue Orations of Cicero were delivered, or composed.
‘Only two of the seven were actually delivered.’ See Forsyth’s Life of Cicero,
18. *just reason* = ὑσθεν λόγος.
20. the disburdening, &c. = the expression of a mere whim of my own.
29. the shaking of every leaf. Observe the word-play. Milton is not altogether free from the punning plague of his time. See the notorious passage in Paradise Lost, vi. 558–567.
37. 1. will soon put it out of controversie, &c. See Milton’s lines On the New Forcers of Conscience. That bishops and presbyters were identical was one of the points urged by the Puritans. See Of Prelatical Episcopacy, where he maintains that it is ‘clear in Scripture that a Bishop and Presbyter is all one both in name and office.’ Of course in the text Milton is speaking with a slightly bitter jocularity. What he now discovers is a moral as well as a historical identity; and the question so long mooted is settled. Cp. Short’s History of the Church of England, § 606.
8. dioeces is from the Gr. διοικησις, (1) an administration; (2) the district administered.
10. a mysticall pluralist = an extraordinary, mysterious, perplexing pluralist; one whose pluralities it would not be easy to define. The Episcopalian pluralist was at least an intelligible monstrosity.
11. sole ordination, &c. The rights of sole ordination and of spiritual jurisdiction were amongst the points attacked by the Smectymnuans and defended by Bishop Hall. See Animadversions, p. 68 of Prose Works.

Novice is the Lat. novicium, which in earlier Latin at least is specially used of one recently made a slave; thus Plautus, Captivi, iii. 5. 60:

‘Recens captus homo nuperus et novitius.’

Batchelor. ‘Le bachelier, propriétaire d’une baccalaria [= une métairie, derived from Lat. vacca], d’un bien rural, est audessus du serf, tout en restant un vassal d’ordre inférieur. Ce mot prend ensuite le sens, en droit féodal, de vassal qui marche sous la bannière d’autrui ; puis de gentilhomme trop jeune pour lever bannière, qui sert sous la conduite d’un autre seigneur ; puis dans la langue de l’ancienne Université, de jeune homme qui étudie sous un maître pour acquérir la dignité inférieure à celle de docteur ; enfin de gradué d’une Faculté.’ (Brachet.) The derivations that used to be given from bas chevalier, and from bacca lauri are ridiculous enough.

Batchelor of Art. So Apology for Smectymnuus, sect. viii, p. 89 of Works. Art is here used in a collective sense.

15. Covenants. ‘Cov’nants were the engagements which the Commons’ House had drawn up for signature the year before and ordered to be subscribed by the Members of both Hones of Parliament and by the People. Beside this natural test or pledge of fidelity enjoined by the Parliament there were voluntary covenants by which the individuals of particular bodies mutually bound themselves to sustain “the good old cause” and to be faithful to each other.’ (Holt White, who refers to Memoirs of Colonel Hutchinson, &c.) See in any History of England some account of the Scotch Covenant of 1638 and the English of 1643.

16. Protestations. In May, 1641, on the discovery of a scheme to call
in the English army from the North to overawe the Parliament, the Commons drew up a Protestation declaring their resolve to uphold the Protestant faith against Romish innovations, to protect the King’s person, the freedom of parliament, and the rights and liberties of the subject. This Protestation was also taken by the peers and bishops. See Annals of England, &c.


‘I gat me out of the doore,
Where Flemynge began on me for to cry
“Master, what will you copen or by?”’

Chop is still common enough in provincial dialects, and amongst schoolboys.


20. an old cannonicall slight = a well-known trick allowed by the canon law. cannonicall. ‘The Apostolical Canons . . are certainly a forgery of much later date’ than the Apostles. ‘The Greek church allows eighty-five, the Latin fifty of them. The first ecclesiastical canon was promulgated A.D. 380. Canon law was first introduced into Europe by Gratian, the celebrated canon-law author in 1151 (or 1127), and was introduced into England, 19 Stephen, 1154.’ (Haydn’s Dict. of Dates.) The second part of the canon law consisted of ‘the decreats’ = a collection of the Popes’ edicts and decrees, and the decrees of councils.

commuting our penance. See Jeremy Taylor’s Rule of Conscience, i. 4:

‘Vitellescus vows to fast upon the last of February, but, changing his mind, believes he may commute his fasting for alms; he resolves to break his fast and give a ducket to the poor. But when he had new dined, he discourses the question again, and thinks it unlawful to commute and that he is bound to pay his vow in kind; but the fast is broken, and yet if he refuses upon this new inquest to pay his commutation he is a deceiver of his own soul.’ Liberty of Prophesying: ‘There is so free a concession of indulgences appendant to all these, and a thousand fine devices to take away the fear of purgatory, to commute or expiate penance, that in no sect of men do they with more ease and cheapness reconcile a wicked life with the hopes of heaven then in a Roman communion.’ See Remains of Archbp. Grindal, Parker Society Ed., p. 457.

21. startle. Observe the intransitive use.

22. [How would you parse be afraid?] conventicle is properly a diminutive of convent = a coming together, a meeting, an assembly. In the seventeenth century it came to be used specially of nonconformist meetings and meeting-houses. Cp. Beaumont’s Psyche, xvi. 80;
"The fond schismatick and heretick fry
Flatter their convicetick cells in vain,
As if the sneaking arms of privacy
The great and catholick spirit could contain."

Taylor (Liberty of Prophesying, xii), speaks of 'the conventicles of the Arians.' See Constitutions and Canons Ecclesiastical; No. XI. Maintainers of Conventicles censured, and XII. Maintainers of Constitutions made in Conventicles censured. P. 542 of the ed. of 1844.

26. the rock of, &c. See Matt. xvi. 18.

31. [What is the grammatical construction of to shut us all up again?]

33. Who cannot but discern, &c. There is a pleonastic negative here. Either 'who cannot discern' or 'who can but discern' would have been sufficient (the latter phrase would have been ambiguous). Cp. the much 'vexed' passage in Macbeth, iii, 6, 8:

'Who cannot want the thought,' &c.

P. 38. 2. baited down. Bear-baiting, as is well known, was a favourite old English sport. See 2 Henry VI, v. 1. 148-150 (Clifford to York, of Warwick, whose cognisance was the bear, and Salisbury):

'Are these thy bears? We'll bait thy bears to death,
And manacle the bearward in their chains,
If thou dar'st bring them to the baiting place.'

At the time Milton wrote this 'sport' was prohibited, but it was neither forgotten nor extinct.

6. voided out of the Church = emptied out of, ejected from the Church.

Cp. Chaucer's Legend of Good Women:

'When that the house voided was of hem all
He looked on his daughter with glad chere.'

Fabyan's Chronicle, Henry III, an. 1230: 'The people there assemblyd voydyd
the churche, and the vycarrys and chanons forsoke theyr deskys.' Void
and avoid originally = to make empty. Strictly, therefore, we should speak
of voiding or avoiding a place, not a person.

9. run, i. e. let run.

13. to her old fetters. See note above to p. 29, l. 1.

15. remember them = make them remember, remind them. So King Lear, i. 4. 72: 'Thou but remember'st me of mine own conception,' &c. This
factive use of verbs is very common in Elizabethan English. See above,
p. 36, l. 3.

16. this obstructing violence, &c. The shameful 'violence' shown to
wards Leighton, Pryyne, Bastwick, Burton, and many another had certainly
'obstructed' the aims of the perpetrators. See Hallam's Constitutional
History, chaps. vii, viii, Student's Edition.

uctoritas.'

20. enhaunces = literally, puts forward, advances.

23. a nursing mother; i. e. not only a producer, but a fosterer and.
encourager. Isaiah xlix. 23: 'And kings shall be thy nursing fathers [so Numb. xi. 12], and their queens thy nursing mothers.' See Locke's Letters on Toleration, Letter 3, chap. ix.

24. A step-dame. This is scarcely an accurate word. Step = A.-S. steop, meaning bereft, and thus a step-child = an orphan. It would seem to have been used specially of a child who has lost one parent; and, in an odd way, in the case of the surviving parent marrying again, the same prefix was used to denote the parent acquired by the marriage. Thus, while strictly speaking a step-mother or father should mean a mother or father who has suffered a bereavement, it does in fact denote just the opposite. In the common usage, all that a step-mother means is one who has to do with a step-child. For a similar misuse cp. the terms grandchild and grandmother. Grandmother is intelligible enough; but grandchild! Contrast the Fr. petite-fille. For the sense of step-dame here, cp. Gr. μητρώα, Lat. noverca, Fr. belle mère. Cp. Sidney's Apol. for Poet., p. 60, ed. Arber: 'to inquire why England, the mother of excellent wits, should be grown so hard a step-mother to poets,' &c. See the story of Battos in Herodotus, iv. 154, of Etearchos' second wife and her step-daughter: ἦ δὲ ἐπεσελθοῦσα δίδυμος ἐναὶ καὶ τῇ ἐργῇ μητρῶϊ τῇ Φρονίμῃ, παρέχοντα τὲ καὶ τὸν ἐπ' αὐτὴν μηχανομένη. Observe how the dying Alkestis entreats Admetos, for their children's sake, not to marry again (Eu-ripides, Alkestis, 304-310):

τούτους [the children] ἀνάσχοι δεσπότας ἐμῶν δόμων, καὶ μὴ ἥπημα τοίδες μητρῶϊ τέκνους, ἔτσι κακίων οὖν ἐμῶ γυνὴ φόνῳ τοῖς σούς καμοὶ παιδὶ χείρα προσβαλέτε, μὴ δήτα δράσης ταῦτα γ', ἀλτοῦμαι σ' ἐγὼ. ἔχθρα γὰρ ἡ πιοῦσα μητρῶι τέκνους τοῖς πρόθ', ἔχθιμης οδὸν ἕπιωτέρα.

Aeschylus calls a certain perilous coast 'a step-mother of ships' (μητρῶα
νεῶν, Prometheus, 727). Cp. Horace's

'Quid ut noverca me intueris, aut uti
Petita ferro bellua?'—Epodes, v. 9.

Vergil's 'injusta noverca' (Eclogues, iii. 33); 'saevae novercae' (Georgics, ii. 128); Ovid's 'sceleratae novercae' (Fasti, iii. 853); 'terrribles novercae' (Metamorphoses, i. 147); Plautus 'apud novercam queri' = to complain in vain (Pseudolus, i. 3. 95); Tacitus 'novercalia odia' (Annals, xii. 2); Seneca's (the Elder) 'novercalibus oculis intueri' (Controversiae, iv. 6), &c.

In the Romaunt of the Rose, Fortune is described to be 'as a step-
mother envious.' See also Shakspere, Troilus and Cressida, iii. 2. 201, Cymb. i. 1. 70, &c.

27. to, i. e. with regard to, in respect of. We should rather say 'from.'

uses. This present in this sense is almost obsolete. With regard to the preterite, notice how the pronunciation is varied with the sense. In the sense 'was wont' the 's' is sharp; in the other sense, it is flat.

29. complexion = constitution. Berners' Froissart, i. chap. 336: 'This
was a man of feble *complexion* and sickly, and endured moche Payne more
that any other.' Dryden's Death of Oliver Cromwell:

'For from all tempers he could service draw;

The worth of each with its alloy he knew,

And, as the confident of nature, saw

How she *complexions* did divide and brew.'

Bacon speaks of 'empirc physicians which commonly have a few pleasing
receipts, whereupon they are confident and adventurous, but know neither
the causes of diseases nor the *complexions* of patients, nor peril of accidents,
nor the true method of cures.' (Advancement of Learning, i. 2. 3; see
Glossary in Aldis Wright's edition.) See Chaucer's Prologue, of the Frank-
lin, 333:

'Of his *complexion* he was sangwyn,' &c.;

where *complexion* = temperament. The modern meaning appears certainly
in the sixteenth century; as in Shakspere, see Sonnet xviii. 6, &c. See
Schmidt's Shakespearean Lexicon s. v.

_Truth is compr'd_, &c. Cp, Psalm lxxxv. 11: 'Truth shall spring out
of the earth' ('shall flourish out of the earth,' Common Prayer).

P. 39. i, Assembly. This was the proper title of what answered in some
degree to the Convocation of the Episcopalian.

5. _There be, who knows not that there be_, &c. See The Likeliest Means to
Remove, &c., close to the end, p. 438 of Prose Works: 'But while Protestants,
to avoid the due labour of understanding their own religion, are content to
lodge it in the breast, or rather in the books, of a clergyman, and to
take it thence by scraps and mammocks, as he dispenses it in his Sunday's
dole, they will be always learning and never knowing; always infants;
always either his vassals, as lay papists are to their priests, or at odds with
him, as reformed principles give them some light to be not wholly con-
formable; whence infinite disturbances in the state, as they do, must needs
follow.'

6. [Explain of here.]

_professors_ = Puritans. May speaks of 'strict Professors of Religion
commonly called Puritans.' (History of the Parliament which began in
1640.)

7. *arrant* is said to be derived from A.-S. _arg_, or _arg_ = wicked, bad;
cp. Dutch and Germ. _arg_. _Arch_ is probably cognate. The _-ant_ is probably,
as Wedgwood suggests, a corruption of an inflectional -en; cp. _Romaunt_ and
_Roman_, _Alyamant_ and _alien_, _tyrant_ and Fr. _tyran_, &c. Also the form may
have been influenced by some fancied connection of the word with Lat.
_arrant_.

[Explain an implicit faith.]

8. _any lay Papist of Loreto_ = 'any one of the fervent, uncompromising
believers who constitute the secular (i.e. unintinitated) population of such a
centre of papal superstition as Loreto.'

_Loreto, a town of Central Italy, not far from Ancona, was one of the_
most frequented places of pilgrimage during the Middle Ages. This popularity it owed to the asserted presence there of the Santa Casa—the very house whose walls witnessed the birth of the Virgin herself, the Annunciation, the Incarnation, and the growth of the Incarnate. This venerable fabric had been moved by angels from its original site in Palestine, when the Saracens destroyed the temple which the Empress Helena had built over it. It rested for three years on the coast of Dalmatia. Then in 1294 it was moved again—to a grove near Loreto. 'After three times changing its position, it at length settled down, in 1295, on the spot it now occupies.' See Murray's Handbook of Central Italy and Florence, Stanley's Sinai and Palestine, &c.

10. piddling. In Reformation in England, Milton speaks of 'the ignoble hucksterage of piddling tithes,' &c. The word is probably connected with petty, Fr. petit, &c.

11. mysteries. The spelling should be 'misteries;' for the word in this sense is derived from the Lat. ministerium. Popular etymology connected it with the Gr. μουτθρον; hence the false orthography. See Max Müller's Lectures on the Science of Language, Second Series, p. 254; cp. Chaucer's Prologue, 613:

'In youthe he lerned hadde a good mester;  
He was a wel good wright, a carpenter.'

skill—be skilful enough, manage, &c. The verb is more common in Elizabethan English as an impersonal, in the sense of 'it matters not; 'makes no difference;' thus Hooker, Ecclesiastical Polity, v. 78: 'Wherefore to passe by the name, let them use what dialect they will, whether we call it a priesthood, a presbytership, or a ministrie, it skilleth not,' &c.

13. bear up with, i. e. keep pace with.

14. What does he therefore but resolv, &c. We should rather say 'resolve,' using the infinitive dependent on 'does.' The former usage is the more correct; for in the latter 'does' is in fact used in two different ways—(1) as a complete verb, and (2) as an auxiliary.

22. commendatory. South's Sermons: 'To soothe and flatter such persons would be just as if Cicero had spoke commendatories of Anthony, or made panegyricks upon Catiline.'

25. dividuall = dividable (Cudworth), separable (Paradise Lost, xii. 82):

'Yet know withal,  
Since thy original lapse, true liberty  
Is lost, which always with right reason dwells  
Twinned, and from her hath no dividual being.'

Something different is the sense in Paradise Lost, vii. 382; the moon  
'Her reign  
With thousand lesser lights dividual holds.'

30. after the malmsey, &c. Breakfast did not become 'a stated meal' till the beginning of the eighteenth century. 'Previously it had been only occasionally served in the establishments of the great.' Queen Elizabeth
breakfasted off meat, bread and cheese, and ale; her morning table was
sometimes spread sumptuously, but the usual custom among both rich
and poor was merely to take a morning draught. "My diet," says Cotton, "is
always one glass as soon as I am dressed, and no more till dinner." At
Harper's or at the Crown, Pepys drank his morning draught, which was
usually a glass of buttered ale,' &c. (Our English Home, pp. 188, 189.)
Both tea and coffee were introduced into England about the middle
of the seventeenth century, but they did not become common for many a
long year.

the malmsey. Chaucer calls it 'malvesie.' See the Shipman's Tale 14481,
Ed. Wright:

'With him brought he a jubbe of Malvesie,
And eek another ful of wyn vernage
And volantyn, as ay was his usage.'

Another form is malmesyne, as in The Squire of Lowe Degre:

'Ye shal have rumnye & malmesye,
Both ypocrasse and vernage wine,' &c.

The name was derived from Malvasia, 'a town upon the eastern coast of the
Morea, near the site of the ancient Epidaurus Limera, within a small distance
from Crete.' (Tyrwhitt.) The Hostess describes Bardolph as 'that arrant
malmsey-nose knave.' (2 Henry IV. ii. 1.)

well spic't bruage. Drant's Horace, Sat. ii. 4:

'As if in brewinge spyced wines
Thou shouldst bestow muche painge,' &c.

31. he whose morning appetite, &c. See Matthew xxi. 19; Mark xi. 13.
P. 40. 6. Publicans = Lat. publicani, as in the A. V. of the New Test.

the tunaging and the poundaging, &c. Tunnage and poundage, 'the
original of our present Customs duties, consisted, beside some less important
matters, of a duty of 3s. on each tun of wine imported and of 1s. in the
pound on the value of other goods; aliens generally paid double.' (Annals
of England.) The student need scarcely be reminded that it was the king's
levying these duties on his own authority that formed one of the gravest
dissatisfactions of the Parliaments of Charles I. See Hallam.

8. 'em (=hem, now superseded by them) is hero reflexive, as very
commonly in Eliz. Eng.

12. what = what for, why; so Lat. quid, Gr. τί. So Julius Caesar,
ii. 1. 123, 124:

'What need we any spur but our own cause
To prick us to redress?'

So in older English passim, e.g. in Chaucer.

18. starch is a softened form of stark, stiff, rigid.

19. stanch is ultimately connected with stagnani, through Old Fr. estancher,

24. is at his Hercules pillars in a warm benefice, i.e. has reached the
furthest point of his expectations, has realised his utmost hopes in thes
matter of preferment. Hercules pillars = the Straits of Gibraltar (see Spenser’s Prothalamion 148, and note in Longer English Poems), were for many an age the western boundary of the world; see Pindar’s Olympia, iii. 77; &c. And so the phrase is used by Bacon, and here, in the general sense of a term or limit; cp. ‘ultima Thule.’ See Adv. of Learning, ed. Wright, ii. 1. 3 ‘For why should a few received authors stand up like Hercules’ columns, beyond which there should be no sailing or discovering, since we have so bright and benign a star as your Majesty to conduct and prosper us?’

26. to finish his circuit = conclude his studies. Cp. ‘When I have neither yet completed to my mind the full circle of my private studies,’ &c. (Reason for Church Government, p. 43 of Prose Works).

an English concordance. ‘The first concordance was made under the direction of Hugo de St. Charo, who employed as many as 500 monks on it.’ (Haydn.) Jeremy Taylor speaks of ‘the Latin Concordances of S. Hierom’s Bible published by Stephens.’ Cruden’s Concordance was published in London in 1737.

27. a topic folio = ‘a commonplace book.’ Aristotle’s Tópos (as Rhetoric, i. 2. 211) = Cicero’s Communes loci (De Oratore, iii. 27), whence our phrase, though in a slightly altered sense. See Cicero, l. c.: ‘Consequentur etiam illi loci qui quanquam proprii causarum et inhaerentem in earum nervis esse debent, tamen quia de universa re tractari solent, communis a veteribus nominati sunt,’ &c. Bacon says a good word for commonplace books, or rather for the theory of them, in the Adv. of Learning, ii. 15. 1; ‘but,’ he adds, ‘this is true that of the methods of commonplaces that I have seen, there is none of any sufficient worth: all of them carrying merely the face of a school and not of a world, and referring to vulgar matters and pedantical divisions, without all life or respect to action.’ Milton himself kept one, but in no servile style; see the edition of it issued by the Camden Society.

28. a sober graduatedship = a steady University career.

a Harmony = a handbook bringing into agreement, or attempting to do so, seemingly incongruous Scripture narratives; a Diatessaron.

a Catena = a list or series or ‘chain’ of authorities. Especially famous in its time was the Catena Aurea of Thomas Aquinas. (The word chain is, in fact, a corruption of catena.)

31. sol fa. See above, p. 107, note on gammuth.
P. 41. 2. charge = duty.

sermoning. Chaucer has the word in a general sense (Knight’s Tale):

‘I trow ther nedeth litel sermoning
To maken you assente to this thing.’

Holinshed’s Description of Ireland, chap. 4: ‘You sermon to us of a dungeon appointed for offenders and miscreants.’

3. interlinearis = line-beneath-line translations. Jeremy Taylor (Sermon iv.) refers to an interlinear translation of the Hebrew Bible, how it renders ‘bechoseth’ by ‘exactores.’ See the passage, opud Richardson.
breviaries = abridgments (the Fr. abrégé, whence our abridge, is a 'corruption' of the Lat. abbreviare), compendiums. Specially, it denoted a concise form of the Roman Catholic service-book, containing 'the seven canonical hours;' originally called the 'custos.'

synopses = general views. Synopsis was a common book-title.

loitering gear = lazy apparatus, slovenly tackle, lifeless stuff. Cp. 'loitering books and interlineary translations,' in the Apology for Smectymnuus. Gear is the A.-S. geara or gearwa, preparation. It is used in a very general sense in Eliz. Eng.; as Troilus and Cressida, i. 1. 6, says Pandarus of Troilus' passion for Cressida:

'Will this gear ne'er be mended?'

Ib. iii. 2. 220; Merchant of Venice, i. 1. 110; ii. 2. 176; Comus, 167, &c.

6. our London trading St. Thomas, &c. i.e. our largest and busiest marts are as well stocked with sermons as with any other ware whatever. This seems to be the meaning of this very difficult passage; but the details of the expression are obscure. St. Thomas may refer to the church of St. Thomas Apostle in Knightriders Street in Vintry Ward (see Stow's Survey of London, ed. Thoms, p. 92); St. Martin to that of St. Martin le Grand (there were other churches of St. Martiu, as in the Vintry, not rebuilt after the fire, &c). What is meant by St. Hugh I do not know. There has never been in London a church dedicated to a saint of that name. (The only Church in England so dedicated is said to be at Quethiock in Cornwall.) Can St. Hugh possibly denote Lincoln? Not that Lincoln Cathedral is dedicated to him (it is dedicated to the Virgin); but because his fame was so especially connected with it. See some account of the famous Bishop Hugh in Murray's Cathedrals. It is perhaps worth noticing that the church and college of St. Thomas Acon were granted to the Mercers. See Milman's St. Paul's, p. 166. Both of the churches of St. Thomas and that of St. Martin just mentioned were in the midst of old London commerce. And it is to be noted that in the old days commerce gathered round churches, churches standing in central positions. 'The market was held before the church door.' (Knight's London, iv. 212.) As for in his vestry, Mr. Lobb suggests that vestry here = clothes-mart; and this is not an impossible sense for Milton to give the word (Pliny xv. 8. 8 uses vestitarum for a clothes-chest, wardrobe), but there seems no other instance anywhere of such an use. Nor, on the other hand, can I find any other mention of 'vestries,' in the ordinary sense, used for places of sale. It is possible that buying and selling went on actually inside the churches, as in the Temple at Jerusalem (John ii. 13–17). It is well known that much 'business' was transacted inside old St. Paul's (see chap. xi. pp. 286–288 of Milman's St. Paul's, &c.). But the only mention of actual commerce inside a church I have noted is in a Letter of Grosseteste of the thirteenth century; see p. 71 of Mr. Luard's edition of the Epistolaer, where is reported a regulation of the king, A.D. 1236 (?), 'ut mercatores de caetero in mundi
suis apud Northamponiam nullas merces exponant venales, nec emergit vel
vendit in ecclesia vel in cimiterio Omnium Sanctorum apud Northam-
toniam. In the Calendar of State Papers for 1637, Domestic Series, ed.
Bruce, p. 508, there is a notice of cock-fighting in a church, at Knotting,
Bedfordshire.

11. impal'd = protected by palisading. Holland speaks of 'those impal'd
places where youths prepare themselves for the wrestle.' (Plutarch, p. 925.)
Cp. Reason of Church Government, i. 2: 'And thus we find here that the
rules of Church discipline are not only commanded but hedged about with
such a terrible impalement of commands as he that will break through
wilfully to violate the least of them must hazard the wounding of his con-
science even unto death.'

12. his back door, i.e. the postern.

15. waking. Watch is orig. a variant of wake; see p. 31, l. 5, note.

20. fend = forfend, defend. The simple fendo is not found in classical Latin.
See Percy Folio MS. i. 21:

'He that does that deed, says Robin,
Ile count him for a man;
But that while will I draw my sword,
And fend it, if I can.'
Percy Folio MS. i. 365:

'Men called him Sir Gray Steele;
I assayed him, and he fended weele.'
See Jamieson's Sc. Dict.

24. hold the truth guiltily. Cp. Romans i. 18: 'For the wrath of God
is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men,
who hold the truth in unrighteousness.'

25. Condemn not, &c. i.e. do not ourselves pronounce our teaching to
be feeble and vain.

27. gadding rout. Cp. Samson Agonistes, 674–677:

'Nor do I name of men the common rout
That wandering loose about
Grow up and perish, as the sumer fly,
Heads without name, no more remember'd.'

Gadding = going up and down, roving, &c. Bale speaks of 'Gadders,
pygrymes, and ydoll seekers' (Apology, fol. 98), and of 'gapynges,
gaddynes, ydoll sensynges and watter conjurynges, wyth many other fine
toyes, whych all came from Rome,' &c. See Richardson, Cp. Prov. 
(e.g. Westmoreland), 'gad-about.' See 'rout' in Lycidas, 61, and Jerram's 
note.

33. Christ, &c. See St. John xviii. 19, 20: 'The high priest then asked
Jesus of his disciples and of his doctrine. Jesus answered him, I spake
openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue and in the temple,
whither the Jews always resort: and in secret have I said nothing,' &c.

P. 42. 19. stop, i.e. blockade.
Creek radially = a bend, a winding, conn. with crook.

20. our richest Marchandize, Truth. ‘The kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls; who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had and bought it.’ (St. Matthew xiii. 45, 46.)

22. Antichristian malice and mystery. The ‘Protestants’ of Milton’s time, as indeed many of the less enlightened of our own, had assurance enough to identify the Church of Rome with the Babylon of the Revelation. See Rev. xvii. 3–7. Or mystery here may = craft, fraud; cp. Paradise Regained, iii. 249.

24. settle = establish.

32. prospect = view, aim.

33. the mortalle glasse, &c. Glass = looking-glass, mirror. So Hamlet iii. 1; Gascoigne’s Steel glass, &c. See 1 Cor. xiii. 12: ‘For now we see through [= by means of] a glass, darkly; but then face to face.’ Cp. 2 Cor. iii. 18. See also old romances of chivalry; also Chaucer’s Squire’s Tale, &c.

P. 43. 1. beatific vision = the sight of God ‘face to face;’ see Par. Lost, iii. 60:

‘About him all the Sanctities of Heaven
Stood thick as stars, and from his sight received
Beatitude past utterance.’

On which Todd quotes from Sandys’ Paraphrase on Job (1637):

‘Againe when all the radiant sons of Light
Before his throne appear’d, whose only sight
Beatitude infus’d.’

Comp. ‘Him whose happy-making sight,’ &c. in lines on Time. See Paradise Lost, i. 684; also the splendid passage near the end of Of Reformation in England, beginning ‘Then, amidst the hymns and hallelujahs of Saints;’

... ‘Where they undoubtedly that by their labours, counsels and prayers, have been earnest for the common good of religion and their country, shall receive above the inferior orders of the blessed the regal addition of principalities, legions, and thrones into their glorious titles, and in super-eminence of beatific vision, progressing the dateless and irreversible circle of eternity, shall clasp inseparable hands with joy and bliss, in overmeasure for ever.’ (Works, p. 21.) Jeremy Taylor’s Sermons, ii. 1: ‘As the saints and angels in their state of beatific vision cannot chuse but love God; and yet the liberty of their choice is not lessen’d; because the object fills all the.
capacity of the will and the understanding,' &c. This 'vision,' called also 'Intuitive,' was distinguished from the 'Abstractive,' and that 'of Comprehension.'

7. the Egyptian Typhon. This was the brother of Osiris, who was guilty of rebellion, murder, and usurpation. After a long search Isis, the wife of Osiris, found her husband's mangled remains; and, helped by her son Horus, overthrew Typhon. See Plutarch's Isis and Osiris. This Typhon was, according to the later poets at least, the Greek monster of the name, called also Typhoeus. See Ovid's Met., v. 318-334, where a song which

Falsoque in honore Gigantae

Ponit et extenuat magnorum facta deorum

relates how the monster broke from his earth dungeon and drove the gods before him into Egypt, where they disguised themselves as best they might. See, as Jebb notes, Döllinger's Gentile and Jew, tr. by Darnell, i. 445.

9. the good Osiris. He had civilized a wild and barbarous people.


16. her Masters second comming. See 1 Thess. iv. 16, 17.

19. feature. Feature is a corruption of the Latin factura (cp. feat, fact, &c.) = shape, fashion, 'make.' See Chaucer's Manciple's Tale:

'Therto he was the semliest man
That is or was, sithen the world bigan;
What needit his fatures to descrive?'

Holland's Ammianus, p. 27: 'A man of goody presence and well favoured, and comely shape and feature of body, his limbs streight and proportionably compact.' (Advud Richardson.) See As You Like It, III. iii. 3; Par. Lost, x. 278:

'So scented the grim feature, and upturned
His nostril wide into the murky air.'

Bacon has facture, as Adv. of Learning, ii. 9. 2, ed. Wright: 'For Aristotle hath very ingeniously and diligently handled the factures of the body but not the gestures of the body, which are no less comprehensible by art and of greater use and advantage.' Elsewhere he speaks of 'the facture or framing of the inward parts.' See Trench's Sel. Gloss., s. v.

22. obsequies = acts of worship. Cp. obsequious, &c. The word here is rather from the Lat. obsequium than obsequiae (= exequiae). So Bale's Image, part ii: 'With all faithful obsequy worshippe hym therefore that created heaven and earthe in wonderfull strength and beuty.' See other instances in Richardson.

24. it smieth, &c. Cp. Par. Lost, iii. 380, 381:

'Dark with excessive light thy skirts appear,
Yet dazzle heaven.'

26. Combust. 'When a planet is not above eight degrees and a half distant from the sun, either before or after him, it is said to be combust or in combustion.' (Harris, afud Johnson.) See Chaucer's Tr. and Cr. iii. 96:
NOTES.

'An if ich hadde, O Venus ful of myrthe,
Aspectes badde of Mars or of Saturne
Or thow combust,' &c.

Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy: 'Guianerius had a patient could make Latin verses when the moon was combust, otherwise illiterate.' See Skeat's Chaucer's Astrolabe, Gloss. The only planets 'oft combust' are those of inferior magnitude—Venus, Mercury, Vulcan. The last is nearly always so; hence its late discovery.


32. unfrocking. Frock denoted specially the gown worn by ecclesiastics. See 'St. Francis frock' in The Creed of Piers Plowman l. 293. (quoted by Fairholt, p. 117 of his Costume in England). Cp. old Fr. frocard = a monk. See Queen Elizabeth's famous letter to Bishop Cox, when he restated a certain 'spoliation' she proposed: 'Proud Prelate, you know what you were before I made you what you are. If you do not immediately comply with my request, by God I will unfrock you. Elizabeth.' (Student's Hallam's England, p. 112, note.)

P. 44. 3. economicall = relating to house management, domestic, &c.
The original sense of the word.

5. Zwinglius. Zwingli was born 1484, died 1531. His life has been written by Hess (tr. by Lucy Aikin), and Hottinger (tr. by Porter).

Calvin. 1509–1564. His life has been written by Bungener, Bolsec, Beza, Masson, Paul Henry, Audin, Dyer, Strähelin (Hole's Biog. Dict.).

6. beacon'd up to us = lighted up as a beacon or signal for us. Beacon is A.-S. beacen, a sign, nod. Cp. beck, beekon.

stark, originally = stiffly, rigidly; and so inflexibly, unalterably, completely. Of the same root is the Gr. στρεψις.

12. Syntagma = 'Collection,' general handbook, summary. See e.g. Hallam's account of Gassendi's Syntagma Philosophicum, published 1658, Lit. of Europe, iv. 194.

15. searching = investigating, exploring. Psalm cxxxix. 1: 'O Lord, thou hast searched me and known me,' &c.

18. homogeneal, and proportionall. It consis't only of truth; and each part bears a certain relation to the other parts. One truth does not overpower another.

the golden rule. The Rule of Proportion was so styled; see e.g. Barnard Smith's Arithmetic, p. 196, ed. 1862: 'Almost all questions which arise in the common concerns of life so far as they require calculation by numbers, might be brought within the scope of the Rule of Three, which enables us to find the fourth term in a proportion, and which on account of its great use and extensive application is often called the "Golden Rule."'

26. discours. See above, p. 103.

27. the highest is grammatically co-ordinate with any point.

28. her. See above, p. 67.
Therefore the studies, &c. Milton ignores the profound change of population in this island in the fifth and sixth centuries. He speaks as if the English were all one with the Britons. So Cowper in his Boadicea, &c.

29. that Writers, &c. In the notes to Drayton's Polyolbion, song i., we are told that 'Lipsius doubts whether Pythagoras received' the doctrine of metempsychosis 'from the Druids, or they from him, because in his travels he conversed as well with Gaulish as Roman philosophers;' and referred to 'Physiol. Stoic. bk. iii. dissertation 12.' See this work in Justi Lipsii Opera Omnia, 1675, vol. iv. On p. 992, speaking of metempsychosis, he says, 'An a Pythagora Druides hauserint nescio; an potius ipse ab ills; nam auctores habeo Gallos eum audisse et Brachmanas.' As an authority, he names in a side-note Clemens Alexandrinus; in whose Stromata, i. chap. 15; p. 770, vol. i. of Clem. Alex. Opera, in Migne's Patrol. Curs. Compl. we find: ὁ δὲ Πλάτων δήλων ὅς σεμνῶν ἄλτως βαρβάρους εὑρίσκεται μεμνημένον αὐτῶν τε καὶ Πυθαγόρου, τὰ πλείωτα καὶ γενεαλότατα τῶν δογμάτων ἐν βαρβάροις μαθόντας. The superior antiquity of British to Roman learning is insisted upon in the tenth song of the Polyolbion. For the Persian wisdom, see Pliny's Nat. Hist., xxx. 4: 'Britannia hodieque eam attonite celebrat tantis caeremoniis ut dedisse Persis videri possit.'

31. the school of Pythagoras. There is an old building at Cambridge traditionally known, from the sixteenth century at least, as 'Pythagoras' school.' According to the opinion Milton here quotes, it was, one may suppose, the place where that philosopher received, not gave, instruction. It is the building known as Merton Hall (it stands on a piece of ground belonging to Merton College, Oxford), and lately devoted to the service of lady students. 'Pythagoras' school, in a garden adjoining St. John's College walks, is falsely supposed to have been one of these [inns or hostels], where the Croyland monks read lectures; but is really the infirmary to St. John's Hospital. Edward the Fourth took it from King's College here, and gave it to Merton College, Oxford; whose property it has ever since been, and is sometimes called Merton Hall.' (Wilson's Memorabilia Cantabrigiae.) See an account of this 'School' in Grose's Antiquities. See also Mayor's Baker's Hist. of St. John's Coll., Camb.

33. civill. See p. 3, l. 25, note.


who govern'd once here. From 78 to 85 a.d.

for Caesar. He governed for Vespasian, for Titus (79-81), and for Domitian.

prefer'd, &c. See Tacitus' Agric. 21, of Agricola's high policy: 'Jam vero principuni filios liberalibus artibus erudire et ingenia Britannorum studiis Gallorum anointe ut qui modo linguam Romanam abuerebant eloquentiam concupiscerent.' See Selden's note to Drayton's Polyolbion, song vi., p. 218 of vol. iv of Chalmers' British Poets, 1810.
2. *the naturall wits, &c.* So Neckam (see Wright's Biog. Lit., A. N. Period, p. 454):

"Ingenium dat ei genius subtile, quod artes
Mechanicas subdit ingenuasque sibi."

3. *that the grave and frugal Transylvanian, &c.* I do not know of any other mention of this fact in general literature; but its accuracy is, I am informed, attested by the Registers of the old Universities. Many Transylvanians went abroad in the seventeenth century to study at the great universities—at Paris, at Prague, in Holland. That some came to England would therefore be probable. See a mention of 'some Moravian Students passing through London,' in Masson's account of Hartlib's Correspondence with Comenius, Life of Milton, iii. 202. Transylvania had during the Thirty Years' War made itself conspicuous on the Protestant side. This was mainly due to the energy and talent of Bethlem-Gabor (=Gabriel Bethlem), Prince from 1613 to 1629. As Lobb points out, there is a letter from Cromwell to his successor; see it in Milton's Works amongst the Literae Oliverii Protectoris. It is full of good-will and sympathy, and frankly recognises the Prince as co-worker in the great Protestant cause. 'Cum autem vestra in rempublicam Christianam praecelara merita laboresque suscepi ad nos usque fama pervenerint, et haec omnia certius, et quae amplius rei Christianae vel defendendae vel promovendae causa in animo habeatis, celsitudo vestra suis literis communicata nobis amicissime voluerit, ea ubiiorum insuper laetandi materias nobis attulere: Deum nempe is in regionibus excitasse sibi tam potentem atque egregium suae gloriae ac providentiae ministrum; qui, cum virtute atque armis tantum possit, de religione communi Protestantium tuenda, cui nunc undique male et dictum et factum est, nobiscum una sociare consilia cupiat.' See this letter Englished on pp. 606, 607 of Works. A sufficient specimen of friendly epistolary intercourse. And it is highly credible, without any such decisive authority as the text, that such friendliness existing, and Lutheranism flourishing so vigorously in the country, natives of it should have visited England, which in the early seventeenth century was the leading Protestant power of Europe. The glory of Transylvania did not last long. In 1689 it became finally subject to Austria. It was however 'governed by its own princes until the extinction of their line in 1713, when it was incorporated with Hungary. Maria Theresa erected it into a grand principality in 1765.' (Pop. Encycl.)

5. *the mountainous borders of Russia.* Strictly, the S.E. part of the kingdom of Poland and a piece of Moldavia lay between Transylvania and Russia. The mountains referred to are offsets of the Carpathians. It may be noticed that Hartlib, to whom in the year the Areopagitica was written he dedicated his Tractate on Education, was of a Polish family. See Dircks' Memoir of Hartlib; also Masson's Life of Milton, iii. 193 et seq.

6. *the Hercynian wildernes = Hercynia Silva,* or Hercynius Saltns (Pliny and Tacitus), or Hercynium jugum (Pliny). "Under this general name.
Caesar appears to have included all the mountains and forests in the south and centre of Germany, the Black Forest, Odenwald, Thüringerwald, the Harz, the Erzgebirge, the Riesengebirge, &c. As the Romans became better acquainted with Germany, the name was confined to narrower limits. Pliny and Tacitus use it to indicate the range of mountains between the Thüringerwald and the Carpathian Mountains. 'The name is still preserved in the modern Harz and Erz.' (Smith's Class. Dict.) See Caesar's De B. G., vi. 24, et seq.; Tacitus, Germ., 50, &c. The name Transylvania—the country beyond the forest, i.e. beyond what are called the 'Carpathian forests.' The Hungarian name, Erdely, signifies the 'mountainous forest.'

7. their stay'd men. Cp. Thucydidēs' ol τῶν ἐχθρῶν μᾶλλον ἐν τῇ μάκαρτημαίᾳ ἡλικίᾳ (ii. 36); Cicero's 'Constans aetas.'

8. that which is above all this, &c. Cp. Samson Agonistes, 1718—30.

10. propending. Shakspere, Tr. and Cr. ii. 2. 190:

'My spritely brethren, I propend to you
In resolution to keep Helen still.'

11. Why else, &c. See Of Reformation in England. In one passage (p. 2, Milton's Works) he speaks of England 'having had this grace and honour from God, to be the first that should set up a standard for the recovery of lost truth, and blow the first evangelic trumpet to the nations, holding up, as from a hill, the new lamp of saving light to all Christendom,' &c.

12. as out of Zion, &c. See Joel ii. 1: 'Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an alarm in my holy mountain,' &c.

14. and had it not been, &c. See Of Reformation in England: '... although indeed our Wickliffe's preaching, at which all the succeeding Reformers more effectually lighted their tapers, was to his countrymen but a short blaze, soon damped and stifled by the pope and prelates for six or seven kings' reigns.'

16. to suppress him as a schismatic and innovator. Cp. Jeremy Taylor's Liberty of Prophesying: '... the names of heretic and schismatic which they [the Roman Catholics] with infinite pertinacity fasten upon all that disagree with them.'

17. innovator. See Bacon's Essays, 'On Innovations.'

Husse. See a list of biographies of him in Hole's Biog. Dict.; see also Milman's Latin Christ., viii. chap. 9.

Jerom, i.e. Jerome of Prague. See Milman.

18. Luther. See a list of lives of Luther in Hole. Michelet has 'collected and arranged' 'the Life of Luther by himself' (tr. by Hazlitt, 1846). See also Stephen's Essays in Eccl. Biog., à propos of D'Aubigné's Hist. of the Reformation.

27. ev'n to the reformation of Reformation it self. See Of Reformation in England, passim.

32. a City of refuge. See Numbers xxxv. 9—15.

33. the mansion house. 'When the king had given to any of them two thousand acres of land, this party purposing in this place to make a dwelling
or, as the old word is, his mansion-house or his manor-house, did devise how he might make his land a complete habitation to supply him with all manner of necessaries.' (Bacon's Use of Law, apud Richardson.)

P. 48. 3. the plates and instruments, &c., i.e. defensive and offensive armour. Plates = breast-plates, almost the only defensive armour still worn in Milton's time.

14. a Nation of Prophets. See Numbers xi. 29.
We reck'n more than five months, &c. Cp: John iv. 35. The Areopagitica was published in November, 1644. Perhaps 'the harvest' means the successes to be achieved, as was hoped, by the new modelled army in the campaign of 1645.

19. opinion. This word has very diverse senses in Eliz. Eng.; hear e.g. Gratiano on 'this fool gudgeon, this opinion,' in M. of Ven., ii. 1. 86-102.

20. fantastic = purely fanciful; as fantastical in Macbeth, i. 3. 139.
of= in connection with, about, over.

27. a little forbearance of one another. See Ephes. iv. 2, and Col. iii. 13.

31. free consciences. See On the New Forcers of Conscience under the Long Parliament:

'Dare ye for this adjure the civil sword
To force our consciences that Christ set free?'

And the sonnet To the Lord General Cromwell:

'Help us to save free conscience from the paw
Of hireling wolves, whose gospel is their maw.'

P. 47. 3. extended, i.e. advanced, expanded.

4. he would cry out as Pirrhus did, &c., after the battle of Heraclea, (280 B.C.). Florus' version is—Pyrhus of course would speak Greek—'O quam facile erat orbis imperium occupare aut mihi Romanis militibus aut ne rege Romanis.' (i. 18. 17.)

5. Pirrhus. 318-272 B.C. 'The fierce Epirot' of the Sonnet to Sir Henry Vane the younger. See Dickson's Mommsen, i. b. ii. chap. 7.


7. despair. See the note on scrup'ld, p. 10, l. 4.

10. as if, while the Temple, &c. See I Kings v, vi.

building. See note on explaining, p. 22, l. 16.

12. a sort of irrational men. See M. of Ven., i. 1. 88.

20. brotherly dissimilitudes. Cp. the use of the Gr. ἄδελφος frequent in Plato. See above, p. 67. So Latin geminus and gemellus, as Horace, Satires, ii. 3. 244:

'Par noibile fratrum,
Nequitia nugis pravorum et amore gemellum.'

26. wherein Moses, &c. See Numbers xi. 24-30, especially 29: 'And Moses said unto him, Enviest thou for my sake? Would God that all the Lord's people were prophets, and that the Lord would put his spirit upon them.'
31. as Joshua then was. See 1. c. 28.
33. will undo us, &c. He adopts the 'direct oration.'
P. 48. 2. enough. See above, p. 81.
6. maniples = companies. A technical term in the Roman army. The size of it varied at different times. In the fourth century, B.C., it consisted of sixty privates, two centurions, and a standard-bearer. Strictly, the word is supposed to mean a number of men serving under the same ensign, manipulus signifying originally 'a handful' or wisp of hay, straw, fern, or the like which, primitively, did duty as a standard.
7. brigade. 'Brigade venu au seizième siècle de l'Ital. brigata (division d'armée).'</br>(Brachet.) The stem is said to be Low Latin briga = strife, which is probably of Celtic origin. Cognate are brigand, brigandine, brigantine.
13. when a City, &c. See in Knight's Pop. Hist. of Eng., iii. 498, second edition, 'a Plan of the Fortifications and City of London.' There were forts from Whitechapel Road to Hyde Park Corner, and on the other side of the river from Vauxhall to 'near the Lock Hospital in Kent Street.' The order for this fortifying was issued by the Parliament in September or October, 1642. 'The population, one and all, men, women, and children, turned out day by day to dig ditches, and carry stones for their bulwarks.' (Knight.) See May's History of the Parliament. On November 12 the Royalists occupied Brentford; on the 13th they advanced to Turnham Green, when, faced by Essex, they fell back without fighting to Colnbrook and so through Reading to Oxford. It must have been in this November that Milton wrote his sonnet 'When the assault was intended [=threatened—a Latinism] to the City'—a piece of pure poetry, his imagination excited by the thought of the poet's power, and how in the old days it had given protection in the midst of wreck and ruin.
14. inroads (our inroads) = in-ridings, 'raids.'
15. defiance. Drayton's Polyolbion:
'And calling unto him a herald, quoth he, fly
To th' Earl of Le'ster's tents, and publickly proclaim
Defiance to his face and to the Montfort's name.'
1 Sam. xvii. 10: 'And the Philistine said, I defy the armies of Israel this day; give me a man, that we may fight together.' Shaksp. Hen. V. iii. 5. 37.
20. should be disputing, &c. It was about the time Milton wrote that certain eminent men of science were beginning to hold those meetings which eventuated in the formation of the Royal Society.
21. ev'n to a rarity, and admiration, i.e. with a degree of acuteness altogether rare and admirable.
25. derives it self = flows on, proceeds.
28. who, when Rome, &c. See Livy, xxvi. i.: 'Minuere etiam spem ejus [Hannibal's hope of taking Rome] et aliae, parva magnaque, res: magna ills, quod quum ipse ad moenia urbis Romae armatus videret, milites sub
vexillis in supplementum Hispaniae profectos audivit; parva autem, quod per eos dies sum forte agrum, in quo ipse castra haberet, venisse nihil ob id deminuto pretio, cognitionem ex quodam captivo est. Id vero adeo superbam atque indignum visum ejus soli, quod ipse bello captum possideret haberetque, inventum Romae emptorem; ut extemplo vocato praecone, tabernas argentarias quae circum forum Romanum tunc essent, jussisset venire.'

when Rome, &c. B.C. 211.

30. at no cheap rate. See Livy's 'nihil ob id deminuto pretio.'
31. regiment = that part of the army that was especially under his command. Spenser uses the word for 'lesser kingdom,' Faerie Queene, ii. 9. 59.
32. happy succes. See note above, p. 61.

P. 49. 1. not only to, &c.; i.e. not only as far as, not only as touching, &c. Cp. 'evn to the ballaty,' &c. p. 24.
2. pertest = sprightliest, proudest, highest. See Chaucer's Reeve's Tale:
   'And she was proud and pert as any pie.'
Shakspere, Troilus and Cressida, iv. 5. 219:
   'For yonder walls that pertly front your town,' &c.
Perhaps perk is the same word. (Comp. wait and wake, mate and make, cate and cake.) Spenser has 'perke as a peacock,' Shepheardes Calender, ii. 8. Some say the word is of Welsh origin—'pert, smart, spruce, pert' (Spurrell); but it is a native Welsh word, or an importation?
5. sprightly up. Sprightly is used adverbially here. Up = excited.
10. casting off the old and wrinell'd skin, &c. Cp. Shakspere, Henry V, iv. 1. 20:
   'And when the mind is quicken'd, out of doubt,
   The organs, though defunct and dead before,
   Break up their drowsy grave and newly move,
   With casted slough and fresh legerity.'
11. wax young again. Cp. Dryden's Vergil's Georgics, iii:
   'When he, renew'd in all the speckled pride
   Of pompous youth, has cast his slough aside,
   And in his summer livery rolls along
   Erect, and brandishing his forky tongue,' &c.
Vergil's words are (437, 438):
   'Quum positis novus exuviiis nitidusque juventa
   Volvitur.'

14. methinks = meseems, it seems to me ('them seem'd,' Spenser, Prothalamion, 60). Thinks in this compound is from the A.-S. thingcan, to seem, a quite distinct verb from thancan, to think. Comp. Germ. denken, and dünken.

15. like a strong man, &c. He is thinking of the Samson, long years after to be the hero of his noble drama. See Judges xvi. 13, 14.

16. her invincible locks. See in the gorgeous allegorising of the story of Samson near the close of The Reason of Church Government: 'his illustrious and sunny locks; the laws, waving and curling about his god-like shoulders;
... those bright and weighty tresses of his laws and just prerogatives which were his ornament and strength; ... his puissant hair, the golden beams of law and right.'

17. *musing*, literally = renewing by moulting. Commonly *muse* or *mew* = simply, 'to moult,' specially of hawks; strictly, to change, Fr. *muer*, Lat. *mutare*. Thus Bacon's Essays, Of Kingdomes and Estates: 'Whatsoever estate or prince doth rest upon them [mercenary forces], he may spread his feathers for a time, but he will *mew* them soon after,' &c. *Mews* meant originally places where falcons cast their coats; then generally places for keeping them; and then = stables.


*flocking birds*, i.e. birds that dare not essay solitary and independent flights, but hover about in companies; *not olawoi* = lone-flying birds. (Olawós = the eagle, Homer, Iliad, xxiv. 292, &c.)

23. *gabble*. See Shakspere, All’s Well that Ends Well, iv. i. 22: 'Choughs' language, *gabble* enough, and good enough' of the lingo Parolles is to be deceived with.

24. a year. He is thinking of the almanack-makers and their prophecies. *Prognosticate* was specially used of astrologers and almanack-makers; as in the old song, When the King enjoys his own again:

'What Booker can *prognosticate,*
Considering now the kingdom's state?'

Booker was an almanack-maker of the day. See Percy's MS. Folio, ed. Hales and Furnival, ii. 24.


30. *bushel*. The word is in fact *box* with a diminutival suffix.


6. *vourchast* = procured. So commonly in Old English. The radical meaning is 'to *chase* or *seek* for.' Fr. *pouchariser* (pour-chasser). See Chaucer's Prologue, 256:

'His *purchase* was full bettuer than his rente.'

8. the *influence* of *heau'n*. The word *influence* was specially used of certain occult streams of power believed to emanate from the heavenly bodies. See 'all the skiey *influences*, Measure for Measure, iii. 1. 9; 'planetary influence,' King Lear, i. 2. 135; 'the moist star upon whose *influence* Neptune's empire stands,' Hamlet i. 1. 118; 'the sacred *influence* of light,' Paradise Lost, ii. 1034. &c. See Trench's Study of Words.

23. *an abrogated and mercissles law*, &c. *From the most remote ages the power of a Roman father over his children, including those by adoption*
as well as by blood, was unlimited. A father might, without violating any law, scourge or imprison his son, or sell him for a slave, or put him to death, even after that son had risen to the highest honours in the state. This jurisdiction was not merely nominal; but in early times was not unfrequently exercised to its full extent, and was confirmed by the laws of the XII Tables.

This 'jus vitae et necis' by degrees fell into desuetude; and long before the close of the republic the execution of a son by order of his father, although not forbidden by any positive statute, was regarded as something strange and, unless under extraordinary circumstances, monstrous. But the right continued to exist in theory, if not in practice, for three centuries after the establishment of the empire, and was not formally abrogated till A.D. 318.' Ramsay's Roman Antiquities, 'The Patria Potestas.'


26. for cote and conduct, &c.; i.e. to resist illegal taxation for the clothing and conveyance of troops, and also for the provision of a navy. See Butler's Characters, The Herald: 'He will join as many shields together as would make a Roman testudo or Macedonian phalanx, to fortify the nobility of a new made lord that will pay for the impressing of them, and allow him Coat and conduct money.'

His four nobles of Danegelt; i.e. ship-money. A very odd periphrasis. Why 'four nobles' it is not easy to see. The noble, first struck in Edward III's reign, and current till that of Elizabeth, was worth 6s. 8d. (see the joke, Shakspere, 1 Henry IV, ii. 4. 317 and 227; the royal = 10s.). Twenty shillings, i.e. three nobles, was the amount for which Hampden was sued. See Hallam's Const. Hist. i. 436. 'Lord Nugent,' says Hallam in a note, 'has published a facsimile of the return made by the assessors of ship-money for the parish of Great Kimble, wherein Mr. Hampden is set down for 31s. 6d., and is returned with many others as refusing to pay. Memoir of Hampden and his Times, vol. i. p. 230. But the suit in the Exchequer was not on account of this demand, but for 20s. as stated in the text for property situate in the parish of Stoke Mandeville.' Danegelt = Dane-money, was the name of an ancient land-tax levied to provide means for bribing off or for repelling the Danes. It was 'first raised by Ethelred II in 991, and again in 1003, &c. . . was suppressed by Edward the Confessor in 1051, revived by William the Conqueror 1068, and formed part of the revenue of the Crown, until abolished by Stephen 1136. Every hide of land . . was taxed at first 1s., afterwards as much as 7s.' (Haydn's Dict. of Dates.) Upon this highly dubious precedent the King's advisers greatly relied in their advocacy and exaction of ship-money. See St. John's speech and the Solicitor-General's (Sir Edward Littleton) reply at Hampden's trial; State Trials, iii. 825–1316, ed. 1809. The first suggester of the odious tax was Noy. To Finch is due the credit of its extension from the sea-ports to the whole kingdom. See Hallam, i. 434. et seq.; Gardiner's Personal Government of Charles I, ii. 66, &c.

27. although I dispraise not, &c. Milton never actually fought in the
Parliamentary ranks. So much might be suspected from the passage in the text; but there is also quite direct and decisive evidence on the point. Professor Masson in the second volume of his valuable Life of Milton discusses the question at length. He finds in the poet’s writings such a remarkable familiarity with military details as to create a presumption that he had seen service; and, from a moral point of view, he conceives that Milton was bound to have served. But he is satisfied by Milton’s eighth sonnet that he did not serve. He seems to overlook a passage in one of the prose works that is as explicit as possible. In the Defensio Secunda Milton defends himself against the possible imputation of cowardice or sloth because he had not served. He claims no share, he says, in the glory of those who by their most honourable arms had repelled slavery. Far other were the weapons of his warfare. See p. 708 of Works: ‘Atque illi quidem [those who took up arms for the laws and religion] Deo perinde consici, servitutem honestissimis armis pepulere; cujus laudis etsi nulam partem mihi vindico, a reprehensione tamen vel timiditatis vel ignaviae, siqua inferitur, facile me tueor. Neque enim militiae labores et pericula sic defugi, ut non alia ratione et operam multo utiliorem nec minore cum periculo meis civibus navarim et animum dubii in rebus neque demissum unquam neque ullius invindicet vel etiam mortis plus aequo metuentem praestiterim. Nam cum ab adolescentulo humanioribus esse studiis ut qui maxime deditus et ingenio semper quam corpore validior, posthabita castrensi opera, qua me gregarius quilibet robustior facile superasset, ad ea me contuli quibus plus potui; ut parte mei meliore ac potiore, si saperem, non deteriore, ad rationes patriae causamque hanc praestantisimam quantum maxime possem momentum accederem. Sic itaque existimabam, si illos Deus re gerere tam praecellars voluit, esse itidem alios a quibus gestas dici pro dignitate atque ornari, et defensam armis veritatem ratione etiam (quod unicum est praestidium vere ac proprie humanum) defendi voluerint. Unde est ut dum illos invictos acie viros admiror, de mea interim provincia non querr; immo mihi gratulor et gratias insuper largitori munere cælesti iterum summas agam obtigisse talem ut aliiis invidienda multo magis quam mihi ullo modo poenitentia videatur.’ For a translation see p. 920 of Works.

29. uter = αὐτήρις.
32. unequall = Lat. iniquum.
33. to a customary acceptance = to what is commonly received.

P. 51. 2. one of your own honourable number. Robert Greville, Lord Brook, adopted son of the ‘friend to Sir Philip Sidney’ (see the epitaph in St. Mary’s Church, Warwick), born 1607, shot from Lichfield Cathedral tower as he was preparing an assault, March 1, 1644. See Clarendon, vi; Neal’s History of the Puritans, ii. 185; Murray’s Western Cathedrals; Wood’s Ath. Oxon. ii. 433; ed. Bliss, 1815, &c. Also Scott’s Marmion, vi. 36.

2. a right noble and pious lord, &c. He was deeply bewailed, as he had
"loved and admired. See e.g. England’s Louse and Lamentation
occasioned by the death of that Right Honourable Robert Lord Brooke, &c., a pamphlet of the time full of enthusiasm and of grief; and also a black-bordered fly-sheet in the British Museum containing 'An Elegy upon the death of the mirrour of magnanimitie the right Honourable Robert Lord Brooke,' &c., 'ex opere (praesertim) Henrici Haringtoni.'

8. He writing of Episcopacy, &c. The title of this work was, 'A discourse opening the nature of that Episcopacie which is exercised in England. Wherein, with all Humility, are represented some Considerations tending to the much desired Peace and long expected Reformation of this our Mother Church.'

10. vota = Lat. votum, his earnest wish.

13. his last testament, &c. See John xiv. 27.

16. he there exhort us, &c. See sect. ii. 7. 'Of the danger of Schismes and sects more fully discus'd; the nature and danger of Anabaptisme, Separatisme, and Unlicensed Preaching. The conclusion with an affectionate desire of Peace and Union.' Cp. Jeremy Taylor's Liberty of Prophesying, passim.

20. disconformity. In the Tetrachordon he speaks of 'utter unfitness, utter disconformity, not reconcilable because not to be amended without a miracle.' Barrow has; 'Dissent from his [St. Peter's] opinion or disconformity to his practice.' (Of the Pope's Supremacy, apud Richardson.)

28. the Temple of Janus, &c. He means it is a time of glorious strife and battle. Truth and Falsehood are opposed face to face. Janus's temple was, as is well known, opened in time of war, closed in peace. See Livy, i. 19, of Numa: 'Mitigandum ferocem populum armorum desuetudine ratus, Janum ad inimum Argiletum, indicem pacis bellique, fecit: apertos ut in armis esse civitatem, clausus pacatos circa omnes populos significaret.' And the historian goes on to say it had been twice closed since Numa's day. See Aeneid, vii. 601–623, &c. 'In all probability' the edifice 'served originally as a gate to the citadel [arched passages were called Janii], and may be identified with the Porta Janualis named by Varro.' (Ramsay's Rom. Antiq.)

29. with his two controversial faces. He was styled 'Bifrons.' See Aeneid, vii. 180; xii. 198, &c. See Ovid, Fasti, i. 25:

'Tum sacer, ancipiti mirandus imagine, Janus

Bina repens oculis obtulit ora meis,' &c.

Possibly some 'pun' is intended on 'controversial' and 'controversial.'

P. 52. a. her confessing, i.e. confession by her. See Student's Marsh's Lectures, p. 276: 'Youre feer' = the fear of you, &c. So 'thy wide alarmes,' in Spenser's Prothalamion 158.

b. beyond the discipline of Geneva, &c.; i.e. beyond what seems to the Presbyterians so adequate and perfect.

discipline = the doctrines, the 'school,' &c. Lat. disciplina, as Cicero, Academica, ii. 3, &c.

7. fabric't. We should say fabricated.

11. to seek for wisdom, &c. See Matt. xiii. 44.
16. *in all their equipage*; i.e. in all their proper equipment, in their full form and state. See Sonnet to Sir Henry Vane the Younger, l. 9. The *radical* notion probably is ‘with their full rigging,’ *equip* being *ultimately* connected with *skip, skip*, the *e* being a mere vocal prefix. See Bracchet.


‘You, worthy uncle,
Shall with my cousin, your right noble son,
Lead our first *battle.*’

2 Henry IV, iv. i. 154:

‘Our *battle* is more full of names than yours.’


ενθά πολύς αφαίρεσε μόχθος ἑπειγομένους ἑτεροθέτης,

οὐσίωτερος κατά τώτα λάμβαι φὸς ἡλίου.

(Wüstemann and Paley read λάβη.) Love’s Labour’s Lost, iv. 3. 366–369, of the metaphorical combat with ‘these girls of France:’

‘King. Saint Cupid, then! and, soldiers, to the field!
Biron. Advance our standards, and upon them, lords;
Pell-mell, down with them! but be first advised,
In conflict that you get the sun of them.’

Where Malone notes that our having the sun at our back and in the enemy’s face was a great advantage to us at Agincourt. In the fights in the old Romances of Chivalry there is often much striving to get this advantage. See in More’s Edw. V, and in Rich. III, how Richmond at Bosworth ‘had the sun in his back, and it shone full in the faces of his enemies.’ See also Lay of the Last Minstrel, v. 18; the Talisman, &c.

21. *by dint of argument*; i.e. by blows dealt or inflicted by argument, by arguments driven home, &c. Cp. ‘dynt of launce,’ Robert of Brunne; ‘*dint* of sword,’ Faerie Queene, vi. 6. 1, and 2 Henry IV, iv. i. 128, &c. So, metaphorically, as in the text, ‘the *dint* of pity,’ Julius Caesar, iii. 2. 198, &c.

22. *to keep a narrow bridge*, &c. It is very common in the Romances of Chivalry for a bridge to be occupied by some knight, with whom every one who passes over must fight, if he will not do obeisance or pay tribute. See Faerie Queene, v. 2. 4, where says the dwarf (‘Florimells owne *dwarfe*’):

‘But in my way a little here beyond
A cursed cruel Sarazin doth wonne,
That keeps a bridges passage by strong hond,
And many errant knights hath there fordonne;
That makes all men for seare that passage for to shonne.’

In stanzas 11–19 is described the flight between Artegall and this savage toll-keeper. Warton refers to Ariosto, xxix. 35; also to La Morte
the goings of the serpent; which goeth basely upon the belly and not upon
the feet." Bacon's Essays, Of Truth.
31. *old Proteus.* See Georgics, iv. 387-452, especially
"Est in Carpathio Neptuni gurgite vates
Caeruleus Proteus, &c.
. . . . novit namque omnia vates,
Quae sint, quae fuerint, quae mox ventura trahantur.
. . . . . . . . . .
Hic tibi, nate, prius vinclis capiendus ut omnem
Expediat morbi causam, eventusque secundet."
Ovid, Fasti, i. 367-374, where that same story of Aristaeus is told;
especially 370:
"Impediant geminas vincula firma manus."
"That water-sprites have the gift of prophecy has been the belief of many
nations." See Thorpe's Northern Mythology, i. 246.
33. *she turns herself into all shapes except her own.* So Proteus. See
Ovid, l. c.:
"Ille suam faciem transformis adulterat arte;"
and Vergil:
"Ille suae contra non immemor artis
Omnia transformat sese in miracula rerum,
Ignemque, horribilemque feram, fluviumque liquentem."
*Also Romans* 6. 322, where says False Semblant:
"For Proteus that cowde him change
In every shape homely and strange,
Cowde never sich gile ne tresoune
As 1," &c.

"And the messenger that was gone to call Micahiah spake unto him, saying,
Behold now, the words of the prophets declare good unto the king with one
mouth: let thy word, I pray thee, be like the word of one of them, and
*Speak* that which is good. And Micahiah said, As the Lord liveth, what the
Lord saith unto me, that will I speak. So he came to the king. And the
king said unto him, Micahiah, shall we go against Ramoth-gilead to battle,
or shall we forbear? And he answered him, Go, and prosper; for the Lord
shall deliver it into the hand of the king.' An answer sadly at variance with
the imminent fact, which, happily recovering his integrity, he proceeds to
predict. See also 2 Chron. xviii.

See Cicero, De Finibus, iii. 16. 53.

7. *those ordinances,* &c. Colossians ii. 14: 'Blotting out the handwriting
of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out
of the way, nailing it to his cross.'

*Paul so often,* &c., e.g. Galatians v. 1.

I. 2
10. his doctrine is, &c. Romans xiv. 5–9.

17. the ghost of a linnen decency, &c. The thing itself had been suppressed, but the spirit of it still hovered around.

a linnen decency = the shallow decorum of surplices and vestments, a superficial respectability, a mere external orderliness. Milton was no admirer of ecclesiastical ‘spinistry,’ as he calls it,—of ‘superstitious copes and flaminal vestures.’ See Reason of Church Government, ii. 2, p. 46 of Works; Animadversions, Works, p. 72, &c.

27. stark. See above, p. 43, l. 18.

28. wood and hay and stubble. See 1 Cor. iii. 12.

30. subdichotomies = minor divisions. Διχοτομία is used by Aristotle; διχοτομεῖν by Aristotle and Plato (Politicus, 302 E.).

P. 54. 1. to sever the wheat, &c. Matthew xiii. 24–30, especially 29.

2. frie. Fry properly = the spawn of fish. It is common in a general sense, often with a notion of contempt. Thus, ‘What a fry of fools is here,’ in Beaumont and Fletcher’s Coronation, l. 1; ‘young fry of treachery,’ Macbeth, iv. 284, &c.

the Angels Ministry. See Matthew xiii. 37–43.

6. I mean not tolerated Popery, &c. See Jeremy Taylor’s Liberty of Prophecying, chap. xx., How far the Religion of the Church of Rome is Tolerable: ‘If we consider their doctrines in relation to government and public societies of men, then, if they prove faulty, they are so much the more intolerable by how much the consequents are of greater danger and malice. Such doctrines as these—the pope may dispense with all oaths taken to God or man; he may absolve subjects from their allegiance to their natural prince; faith is not to be kept with heretics; heretical princes may be slain by their subjects—these propositions are so depressed and do so immediately communicate with matter and the interests of men that they are of the same consideration with matters of fact, and are to be handled accordingly,’ &c. See also Locke, On Toleration, 1st Letter: ‘That Church can have no right to be tolerated by the magistrate which is constituted on such a bottom that all those who enter into it do thereby ipso facto deliver themselves up to the protection and service of another prince,’ &c. For further exhibition of Milton’s views, see A Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes, p. 417 of Works, and Of True Religion, Heresy, Schism and Toleration, p. 564: ‘Let us now inquire whether popery be tolerable or no,’ &c. See Dean Nowell’s views a century before, in Milman’s St. Paul’s, pp. 303, 304.


11. that also which is impious, &c. See Locke, On Toleration, 1st Letter: ‘Those are not to be tolerated who deny the being of God,’ &c.

17. the unity of Spirit, &c. See Ephesians iv. 3.

19. would write. Would in this use is virtually a present tense.

22 bejesuited. In his treatise On Divorce he has belaungiven (‘whom t deny to have belaungiven his own sacred people with this very
allowance.') Cp. be-knave, befriend, bejade (Animadversions); be-dwarf (Donne), befool (Gower), bemartyr (Fuller), &c. Be-=by; see Earle's Philol. § 559.

29. ev'n as the person, &c. It was said of St. Paul that 'his bodily presence' was 'weak' (2 Cor. x. 10.). Cp. Plutarch, Agesilaos, ch. xxxvi: ἐπὶ δὲ κατέπλευσαν εἰς τὴν Ἀγαθωνίαν κ.τ.λ. 'Upon his arrival in Egypt all the great officers of the kingdom came immediately to pay their court to him. Indeed, the name and character of Agesilaus had raised great expectations in the Egyptians in general, and they crowded to the shore to get a sight of him; but when they beheld no pomp or grandeur of appearance, and saw only a little old man, and in as mean attire, seated on the grass by the sea-side, they could not help regarding the thing in a ridiculous light, and observing that this was the very thing represented in the fable, "The mountain had brought forth a mouse."' Aemilius Probus's Life of Agesilaus (commonly assigned to Cornelius Nepos), chap. viii.: 'Atque hic tantus vir ut naturam saucitatem habuerat in tribuendis animi virtutibus, sic maleficam nactus est in corpore fingendo. Nam et statura fuit humili et corpore exiguus et claudeus altero pede. Quae res etiam nonnullam affectavit deformitatem; atque ignoti, faciem ejus cum intuerentur, contemnebant; qui autem virtutes noverant, non poterant admirari satis.' See Bacon's Essays, Of Deformity: 'And therefore let it not be marvelled, if sometimes they [deformed persons] prove excellent persons; as was Agesilaus, Zanger the Sonne of Solyman, Æsop, Gasca President of Peru; and Socrates may goe likewise amongst them; with others.'

30. to see to = to look towards or on. So Comus, 620; Joshua xxii. 10.

P. 55. 3. when God shakes a Kingdome, &c. Cp. Joel iii. 16; Haggai ii. 6, 7.

13. his beam. Par. Lost, iii. 2.

18. to set places. Cp. Par. Lost, xi. 836-838:
   "... that God attributes to place
   No sanctity, if none be thither brought
   By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.'

19. outward callings of men, i.e. 'priests.' See Of Reformation in England.

20. the old Convocation house=the Chapter-house at Westminster. Till Wolsey's time Convocation met in St. Paul's. See Milman's St. Paul's, p. 289. Convocation was first summoned by writ in 1295. Its power was circumscribed by Henry VIII, but by no means destroyed. See Hallam's Constit. Hist. chap. xvi. of the Student's edition. The Convocations of 1603 and of 1640 had caused great irritation by an ill-timed deluded effort to impose certain regulations on the country at large.

21. the Chappell at Westminster. The Assembly of Divines met in Henry VII's Chapel, Westminster. Their first meeting was held on Sunday, July 1, 1643. See Short's History of the Church of England, § 595.

22. all the faith, &c. The works of the Assembly consisted of a Disc
tory for Worship and Ordination, of a Confession of Faith, and two Cate-
chisms, the larger and the shorter. 'Besides these there is a form of
presbyterian Church government agreed upon by the Assembly, but not
authorised.' (Short, § 590.)

22. canoniz'd, embodied in canons; so κανώνισθαι in ecclesiastical Greek.
I do not know that the word occurs elsewhere in this sense; but that is
no objection to Milton's using it so. For the common sense, canon denoted
the catalogue of saints and martyrs whose memory was by ecclesiastical law
preserved in the festivals of the Church; hence canonize = to enroll in this
catalogue. In Hamlet, i. 4. 47—

'but tell

Why thy canoniz'd bones, hearsed in death,
Have burst their cerements'—
canoniz'd seems to be used loosely for 'that have been buried duly according
to the rule with all proper rites.'

24. to supple the least bruise, &c. See Jeremy Taylor's chapter 'Of
Compliance with disagreeing Persons or weak Consciences in general' in
his Liberty of Prophesying.

25. edifie is strictly to build up.
29. with all his leige tombs about him. Around him then lay the Lady
Margaret his mother, Queen Elizabeth, her rival of Scotland, King James I
and his Queen, &c.; to be joined subsequently by King Charles II, Wil-
liam III and Queen Mary, King George II, &c.

33. that we doe not, &c. = Lat. quin, &c.

P. 50. 4. tasted learning. Cp. Gr. γεβέσθαι. So Tennyson, In Me-
moriam, lxxxix:

'He tasted love with half his mind,' &c.
See the euphuistic phrase, and Viola's criticism of it, Twelfth Night, iii. 1.
88–92.

7. manage = take in hand. Fr. ménager, Lat. manu agere.
v. 20.


clung. If a 'that' has not dropped out of the text, clung = made
to cling, attached or fastened on to, gathered. In Par. Lost, x. 512, of
Satan's metamorphosis, clung may be either preterite or past participle:

'His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,
His arms clung to his ribs, his legs entwining
Each other, till supplanted down he fell,' &c.

28. the check that Moses, &c. See above, p. 47.
29. the countermand, &c. See Luke ix. 50.
30. young John. According to tradition he was the youngest of the
Apostles. The old Masters often portray him as in the prime of youth;
so Hans Memling (or Hemling), Isaac von Melem, Raphael, Domenichino, &c. See Jameson’s Sacred and Legendary Art, vol. i. 157-172.

31. *whom he thought unincen't.* ‘Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us.’ (Luke ix. 49.)

32. *our Elders.* The word *presbyterian* is derived from the Gr. πρεσβυτέρος = ‘elderly.’

*testy.* Literally = ‘heady,’ from O. Fr. testes; cp. Lat. cerebrosus.

P. 57, r. *lett.* The old verb let, to hinder, is of quite distinct origin from our common verb let, to permit. It is the A.-S. lattan. (The other let is the A.-S. lātan.) See the Glossary in Skeat’s Piers the Plowman, Clar. Press ed.; Shaks. Henry V, v. 2. 65; Hamlet, i. 4. 85, &c.; Exodus v. 4; Romans i. 13; 2 Thess. ii. 7, &c.; also Bible Word-Book.

4. *the most Dominican part,* &c. See above, p. 35, l. 29.

6. *it would be no unequall distribution,* &c. See Ovid, Art. Am. i. 655:

‘Neque enim lex aequior ulla
Quam necis artifices arte perire sua.’

13. *that Order publish nest before this.* If the Order of January 29, 1643, is meant, that was the Order next but one before this; for there was another passed March 9, 1643. The date of ‘this’ was June 14, 1643. The Order ‘made by the Honourable House of Commons Die Sabbati, 29 Januarii, 1641,’ is as follows (see Arber’s Reprint, p. 24): ‘It is ordered that the Master and Wardens of the Company of Stationers shall be required to take especial Order, that the Printers doe neither print, nor reprint anything without the name and consent of the author. And that if any Printer shall notwithstanding print or reprint anything without the consent and name of the Author, that he shall then be proceeded against as both Printer and Author thereof, and their names to be certified to this House.’

17. *the fire.* It was common to order obnoxious books, or what were considered so, to be publicly burned.

*the executioner.* His function was not only to inflict death, but such minor penalties as branding, nose-slitting, ear-severing, &c. Of course all that the name means is one who fulfils or carries out the doom pronounced by the judge. Langland speaks of ‘assissours and executours’ (Piers Plowman).

19. *authentic Spanish policy = policy genuinely and really Spanish.* Certainly the distinction between *genuine* and *authentic* drawn by Bishop Watson in his Apology for the Bible, 1796, so often quoted (e.g. in later editions of Paley’s View of the Evidences of Christianity, first published 1794), holds good neither etymologically nor in practice. ‘A genuine book,’ he states, ‘is that which was written by the person whose name it bears as the author of it. An authentic book is that which relates matters of fact as they really happened.’ *Authentico* is the Gr. ἀδεικτικός, ‘warranted,’ opposed to ἀδεικτος. (Liddell and Scott.) See Cicero, Ep. ad Att. ix. 14: ‘Atque eam loqui quidam ἀδεικτικός narrabit,’ &c. Ιβ. x. 9: ‘Id enim ἀδεικτικός nunciabatur,’ &c. Ἀδεικτικός is the adjective of ἀδεικτικός,
contracted from *αβρολύρης*, 'one who does anything with his own hand;' an actual murderer, a suicide, &c. See Eikonoklastes, chap. 28: 'It were extreme partiality and injustice, the flat denial and overthrow of herself [of Justice] to put her own *authentic* sword into the hand of an unjust and wicked man.' See Trench's Select Glossary.

22. *a Star-chamber decree, &c.* See a copy of this Decree, 'made the eleventh day of July last past, 1637,' in Arber's Reprint, pp. 7–23.

*Star-chamber.* See Hallam, Student's ed., pp. 28–30, 227–230. This shameful Court was abolished in 1641, along with that of the High Commission. There were some who would have revived it in 1661, but happily they were unable.


29. bind books, &c.; i.e. 'bind them over,' as we say.

30. your precedent Order. See above.

31. those men, &c.; i.e. the booksellers.

33. the fraud of some old patentees, &c. These tradesmen had feared that certain privileges of their own might be encroached upon, should all restrictions upon Printing be removed.

P. 58. 1. monopolizers. See above, p. 33.

under pretence of the poor, &c. See the Order: 'And that no person or persons shall hereafter print, or cause to be reprinted, any Book or Books or part of Book or Books heretofore allowed of and granted to the said Company of Stationers for their relief and maintenance of their poore, without the licence or consent of the Master, Wardens, or Assistants of the said Company,' &c.

3. the just retaining, &c. He refers to this matter of copyright above, p. 5. *severall.* Several is etymologically connected with *separate*. See note in Longer English Poems on Hymn on the Nativity, 234:

'Each fettered ghost slips to his severall grave.'

5. *colours* = specious arguments, disguising or misrepresentations, exaggerations or extenuations, &c. We still speak of a 'highly coloured account,' &c. This use of the word comes to us from the Latin rhetoricians. See Quintilian, iv. 2. 28, et seq. &c. Juvenal, vi. 280:

'Dic aliquem, sodes, hic, Quintiliane, *colorum*, &c.

See Chaucer's Squier's Tale, Part ii; Bacon's Coulers of Good and Evil, a fragment, 1597, printed in the Golden Treasury edition of the Essays.

6. to exercise, &c. = to retain their advantages over other members of the bookselling trade.

12. *malignant* = anti-Parliamentary, Royalist, &c. Says the Tory Dr. Johnson: 'It was a word used of the defenders of the church and monarchy by the rebel sectaries in the civil wars.'

14. *these Sophisms and Elenchs of merchandize* = these trade considerations; more strictly, these fallacious arguments urged by the booksellers, and their refutations.

*eelench* = ἐλεγχος, Aristotle, Analytica Priora, ii. 20. 1. A syllogism
by which the adversary is forced to contradict himself was specially so called; but it is often used in a general sense. See Bacon's Advancement of Learning, ii. 14, 5, 6: 'The second method of doctrine [the first is that part of logic which is comprehended in the 'Analytics'] was introduced for expedite use and assurance sake, discovering the more subtile forms of sophisms and illaqueations with their redargutions, which is that which is termed elenches. For although in the more gross sort of fallacies it happeneth (as Seneca maketh the comparison well) as in juggling feats, which, though we know not how they are done, yet we know well it is not as it seemeth to be; yet the more subtile sort of them doth not only put a man besides his answer, but doth many times abuse his judgement. This part concerning elenches is excellently handled by Aristotle in precept, but more excellently by Plato in example; not only in the persons of the Sophists, but even in Socrates himself. who, professing to affirm nothing, but to infirm that which was affirmed by another, hath exactly expressed all the forms of objection, fallace, and redargution,' &c.


20. in highest authority; i.e. for those in highest authority.

a plain advertisement=a mere calling of your attention to the facts of the case, a simple notification, &c.

21. is a vertue, &c. He concludes, as he began, with a lofty panegyrick of the Parliament that had done for us such splendid service.
INDEX OF PROPER NAMES.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Augustus, 8.</td>
<td>Dion Prusaeus, 4.</td>
<td>Hugh, St., 41.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calvin, 45.</td>
<td>Epiphanius, 19.</td>
<td>Isis, 43.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Canada, 20.</td>
<td>Epirots, 47.</td>
<td>Italy, 8.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GENERAL INDEX.

Disexercising, 5.
Disparagement, 34.
Distinct, 20.
Divindual, 39.
Divulg'd, 27.
Doctor, 31.
Dram, 26.
Ducking, 12.
Dunce, 33.

Economicall, 44.
Edifie, 55.
Elenchs, 58.
'Em, 40.
Enchiridion, 35.
Encroachment, 10.
Enhances, 38.
Equall, 3.
Exorcism, 11.
Exquisite, 16.
Extended, 47.

Fabrick, 52.
Faction, 9.
Fain, 14.
Fansied, 10.
Fantastic, 46.
Feature, 43.
Fell upon, 23.
Fend, 41.
Ferular, 30.
Fescu, 30.
Fifth essence, 6.
Firmament, 43.
Fist, 32.
Flourishes, 35.
Foreine, 20.
Forgotten, 36.
Formost, 1, 12.
Frustrate, 27.
Furder, 10.
Fustian, 35.

Gabble, 49.
Gadding, 41.
Gammuth, 24.
Garb, 24.
Garland, 18.

Gear, 41.

Glittars, 24.
Glutton, 11.

Gluttony, 24.
Grammercy, 25.

Hand, 28.
Harmony, 40.
Hears ill, 24.
Her, 44.
Heretics, 9.
Hidebound, 32.
His, 5.
Homily, 5.

Ilfavouredly, 13.
Impaled, 41.
Ingrossers, 49.
Ink to cast, 12.
Inquisitorial, 13.
Innovator, 45.
Introdes, 48.
Interlinearies, 41.
Invention, 33.

Jaunt, 31.
Jealous, 34.
Journey-work, 28.

Keri, 19.
Knew, 33.
Knowing, 33.

Laick, 35.
Lawkeepers, 23.
Lay by, 10.
Lectures, 24.
Lett, 57.
Libertine, 7.
Licence, 6.
Lifeblood, 6.
Light on, 13.
Likely, 1.
Limbo's, 13.
Loitering, 41.

Madrigalls, 24.
Malignant, 58.
Malmsay, 39.
Manage, 56.
Maniples, 48.
Manners, 11.
Mansion-house, 45.
Matrimonial, 5.

Methinks, 49.
Monopolizers, 58.
Motions, 25.
Mov'd it, 8.
Muing, 49.
Municipal, 24.
Muselesse, 7.
Mysteries, 39.

Naughty, 16.
Never so, 32.
Nicely, 19.
Noise, 49.
Novice, 37.

Obsequies, 43.
Obtain, 4.
Odds, 14.
Of, 46.
Offence, 15.
Officials, 27.
Omer, 17.
Opinion, 46.

Painful, 5.
Passing, 10.
Patriarchal, 32.
Pedantick, 32.
Perfected, 10.
Perfunctory, 32.
Permitted, 20.
Perswades, 4.
Perst, 49.
Perverted, 20.
Piaza, 12.
Piddling, 39.
Pittance, 25.
Plates, 46.
Plurals, 29.
Polite, 3.
Politics, 25.
Pound, 21.
Poundage, 40.
Prattle, 24.
Prevent, 22.
Professors, 39.
Propending, 45.
Prospect, 42.
Prove, 15.
Provoking, 25.
Publicans, 49.
**GENERAL INDEX.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Purchast, 50.</td>
<td>Shifis, 14.</td>
<td>To see to, 52.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------------</td>
<td>--------------------</td>
<td>Tunnage, 40.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quell, 7.</td>
<td>Sol-fa, 40.</td>
<td>Unfrocking, 43.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Regiment, 48.</td>
<td>Spunge, the, 12.</td>
<td>Uses, 38.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Repasting, 16.</td>
<td>Standing to, 30.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Resembling of, 8.</td>
<td>Starch, 40.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Resented, 33.</td>
<td>Stark, 44.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Respondories, 12.</td>
<td>States, 1.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ribald, 20.</td>
<td>Stationer, 32.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ridd, 29.</td>
<td>Statist, 3.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ript up, 12.</td>
<td>Statutes, 33.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roundels, 8.</td>
<td>Stay'd, 45.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scanting, 26.</td>
<td>Stop, 42.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scapt, 30.</td>
<td>Story, 9, 28.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scurrell, 15.</td>
<td>Success, 1.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Searching, 44.</td>
<td>Surlinesse, 7.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seised, 15.</td>
<td>Synopses, 41.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sensible, 29.</td>
<td>Tasted, 56.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sentences, the, 14.</td>
<td>Testy, 56.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sermoning, 41.</td>
<td>Theam, 30.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Settle, 42.</td>
<td>Then, 1.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tickets, 33.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>To, 23, 38.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**THE END.**